

## Noncommutative geometry, dynamics, and $\infty$ -adic Arakelov geometry

Caterina Consani<sup>1</sup> and Matilde Marcolli<sup>2</sup>

*We dedicate this work to Yuri Manin, with admiration and gratitude*

**Abstract.** In Arakelov theory a completion of an arithmetic surface is achieved by enlarging the group of divisors by formal linear combinations of the “closed fibers at infinity”. Manin described the dual graph of any such closed fiber in terms of an infinite tangle of bounded geodesics in a hyperbolic handlebody endowed with a Schottky uniformization. In this paper we consider arithmetic surfaces over the ring of integers in a number field, with fibers of genus  $g \geq 2$ . We use Connes’ theory of spectral triples to relate the hyperbolic geometry of the handlebody to Deninger’s archimedean cohomology and the cohomology of the cone of the local monodromy  $N$  at arithmetic infinity as introduced by the first author of this paper. First, we consider derived (cohomological) spectral data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$ , where the algebra is obtained from the  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  action on the cohomology of the cone, induced by the presence of a polarized Lefschetz module structure, and its restriction to the group ring of a Fuchsian Schottky group. In this setting we recover the alternating product of the archimedean factors from a zeta function of a spectral triple. Then, we introduce a different construction, which is related to Manin’s description of the dual graph of the fiber at infinity. We provide a geometric model for the dual graph as the mapping torus of a dynamical system  $T$  on a Cantor set. We consider a noncommutative space which describes the action of the Schottky group on its limit set and parameterizes the “components of the closed fiber at infinity”. This can be identified with a Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  associated to a subshift of finite type. We construct a spectral triple for this noncommutative space, via a representation on the cochains of a “dynamical cohomology”, defined in terms of the tangle of bounded geodesics in the handlebody. In both constructions presented in the paper, the Dirac operator agrees with the grading operator  $\Phi$  that represents the “logarithm of a Frobenius-type operator” on the archimedean cohomology. In fact, the archimedean cohomology embeds in the dynamical cohomology, compatibly with the action of a real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$ , so that the local factor can again be recovered from these data. The duality isomorphism on the cohomology of the cone of  $N$  corresponds to the pairing of dynamical homology and cohomology. This suggests the existence of a duality between the monodromy  $N$  and the dynamical map  $1 - T$ . Moreover, the “reduction mod infinity” is described in terms of the homotopy quotient associated to the noncommutative space  $\mathcal{O}_A$  and the  $\mu$ -map of Baum–Connes. The geometric model of the dual graph can also be described as a homotopy quotient.

**Mathematics Subject Classification (2000).** 14G40, 58B34, 46L55.

**Key words.** Arithmetic surfaces, fibers at infinity, spectral triples,  $L$ -factors, Schottky groups.

---

<sup>1</sup>Partially supported by NSERC grant 72016789.

<sup>2</sup>Partially supported by Humboldt Foundation Sofja Kovalevskaja Award.

Золотое руно, где же ты, золотое руно?  
 Всю дорогу шумели морские тяжелые волны,  
 и покинув корабль, натрудивший в морях полотно,  
 Одиссей возвратился, пространством и временем полный  
 (Осип Мандельштам)

## Contents

1. Introduction	169
1.1 Preliminary notions and notation	173
2. Cohomological constructions	175
2.1. A bigraded complex with monodromy and Lefschetz operators	176
2.2. Polarized Hodge–Lefschetz structure	177
2.3. Cohomology groups	180
2.4. Relation with Deligne cohomology	183
2.5. Archimedean Frobenius and regularized determinants	188
3. Arithmetic spectral triple	193
3.1. Spectral triples	195
3.2. Lefschetz modules and cohomological spectral data	198
3.3. Simultaneous uniformization	202
3.4. Some zeta functions and determinants	206
3.5. Zeta function of the special fiber and Reidemeister torsion	209
4. Shift operator and dynamics	212
4.1. The limit set and the shift operator	214
4.2. Coding of geodesics	218
4.3. Cohomology and homology of $\mathcal{S}_T$	219
5. Dynamical (co)homology of the fiber at infinity	224
5.1. Dynamical (co)homology	225
5.2. Hilbert completions	226
5.3. Arithmetic cohomology and dynamics	227
5.4. Duality isomorphisms	232
6. Dynamical spectral triple	234
6.1. Cuntz–Krieger algebra	234
6.2. Spectral triple	237
6.3. Archimedean factors from dynamics	242
7. Reduction mod $\infty$ and homotopy quotients	243
8. Further structure at arithmetic infinity	246
References	249

## 1. Introduction

The aim of this paper is to show how noncommutative geometry provides a connection between two constructions in Arakelov theory concerning the archimedean fibers of a one-dimensional arithmetic fibration. On the one hand, we consider the cohomological construction introduced by the first author in [15], which was inspired by the theory of limiting mixed Hodge structures on the limit fiber of a geometric degeneration over a disc, which is related to Deninger's archimedean cohomology and regularized determinants ([20]). On the other hand, we reinterpret Manin's geometric realization of the dual graph of the fiber at infinity as an infinite tangle of bounded geodesics inside a real 3-dimensional hyperbolic handlebody ([24]) in the context of dynamical systems. The problem of relating the results of [24] with the cohomological constructions of Deninger was already addressed by Manin in [24], but to our knowledge no further progress in this direction has been made since then.

Let  $\mathbb{K}$  be a number field and let  $O_{\mathbb{K}}$  be the ring of integers. The choice of a model  $X_{O_{\mathbb{K}}}$  of a smooth, algebraic curve  $X$  over  $\mathbb{K}$  defines an arithmetic surface over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$ . A closed vertical fiber of  $X_{O_{\mathbb{K}}}$  over a prime  $\wp$  in  $O_{\mathbb{K}}$  is given by  $X_{\wp}$ : the reduction mod  $\wp$  of the model. It is well known that a completion of the fibered surface  $X_{O_{\mathbb{K}}}$  is achieved by adding to  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$  the *archimedean places* represented by the set of all embeddings  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ . The Arakelov divisors on the completion  $\overline{X_{O_{\mathbb{K}}}}$  are defined by the divisors on  $X_{O_{\mathbb{K}}}$  and by formal real combinations of the closed vertical fibers at infinity. Arakelov's geometry does not provide an explicit description of these fibers and it prescribes instead a hermitian metric on each Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ , for each archimedean prime  $\alpha$ . It is quite remarkable that the hermitian geometry on each  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  is sufficient to develop an intersection theory on the completed model, without an explicit knowledge of the closed fibers at infinity. For instance, Arakelov showed that intersection indices of divisors on the fibers at infinity are obtained via Green functions on the Riemann surfaces  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ .

Inspired by Mumford's  $p$ -adic uniformization of algebraic curves [33], Manin realized that one could enrich Arakelov's metric structure by a choice of a Schottky uniformization. In this way, the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  is the boundary at infinity of a 3-dimensional hyperbolic handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$ , described as the quotient of the real hyperbolic 3-space  $\mathbb{H}^3$  by the action of the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ . The handlebody contains in its interior an infinite link of bounded geodesics, which are interpreted as the dual graph of the closed fiber at infinity, thus providing a first geometric realization of that space.

A consequence of this innovative approach is a more concrete intuition of the idea that in Arakelov geometry the "reduction modulo infinity" of an arithmetic variety should be thought of as "maximally degenerate" (or totally split: all components are of genus zero). This is, in fact, the reduction type of the special fiber admitting a Schottky uniformization ([33]).

In this paper we consider the case of an arithmetic surface over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$  where the fibers are of genus  $g \geq 2$ . The paper is divided into two parts.

The first part consists of Sections 2 and 3. Here we consider the formal construction of a cohomological theory for the “maximally degenerate” fiber at arithmetic infinity, developed in [15]. Namely, the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  supports a double complex  $(K^\cdot, d', d'')$  endowed with an endomorphism  $N$ . This complex is made of direct sums of vector spaces of real differential forms with certain “cutoff” conditions on the indices, and was constructed as an archimedean analogue of the one defined by Steenbrink on the semistable fiber of a degeneration over a disc [48]. The hyper-cohomologies of  $(K^\cdot, d = d' + d'')$  and  $(\text{Cone}(N)^\cdot, d)$  are infinite dimensional, graded real vector spaces. We show that their summands are isomorphic twisted copies of a same real de Rham cohomology group of  $X$ . The arithmetic meaning of  $K^\cdot$  arises from the fact that the cohomology of  $(\text{Coker}(N)^\cdot, d)$  computes the real Deligne cohomology of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ , and the regularized determinant of an operator  $\Phi$  on the subspace  $\mathbb{H}(K^\cdot, d)^{N=0}$  of the hyper-cohomology of the complex  $(K^\cdot, d)$  recovers the archimedean factors of [20]. The complex  $K^\cdot$  carries an important structure of bigraded polarized Lefschetz module à la Deligne and Saito ([43]). In particular one obtains an induced inner product on the hyper-cohomology and a representation of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ .

The first part of this paper concentrates on the cohomology  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  of  $\text{Cone}(N)$ . In the classical case of a semistable degeneration over a disc, the cohomology  $H^\cdot(|\mathcal{G}|)$  of the dual graph of the special fiber can be described in terms of graded pieces under the monodromy filtration on the cohomology of the geometric generic fiber so that  $H^\cdot(|\mathcal{G}|)$  provides at least partial information about the mixed Hodge structure on  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  (here  $X^*$  denotes the complement of the special fiber in the model and the cohomology of this space has a second possible description as hyper-cohomology of the complex  $\text{Cone}(N)^\cdot$ ). In the arithmetic case of a degeneration on the ring of integers of a local field, the cohomology group  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  is still endowed with a graded structure, which is fundamental in arithmetic for determining the behavior of the local Euler factors at integer points on the left of the critical strip on the real line. In fact, the cohomology  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  carries more arithmetical information than just the cohomology of the dual graph of the special fiber  $H^\cdot(|\mathcal{G}|)$ .

Using noncommutative geometry, we interpret the data of the cohomology  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  at arithmetic infinity, with the operator  $\Phi$  and the action of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  related to the Lefschetz operator, as a “derived” (cohomological) version of a *spectral triple* à la Connes.

More precisely, we prove that the bigraded polarized Lefschetz module structure on the complex  $(K^\cdot, d = d' + d'')$  defines data  $(A, H^\cdot(X^*), \Phi)$ , where the algebra  $A$  is obtained from the action of the Lefschetz  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  on the Hilbert space completion of  $H^\cdot(X^*)$  with respect to the inner product defined by the polarization on  $K^\cdot$ . The operator  $\Phi$  that determines the archimedean factors of [20] satisfies the properties

of a Dirac operator.

The data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$  should be thought of as the cohomological version of a more refined spectral triple, which encodes the full geometric data at arithmetic infinity in the structure of a noncommutative manifold. The simplified cohomological information is sufficient for the purpose of this paper, hence we leave the study of the full structure to future work.

The extra datum of the Schottky uniformization considered by Manin can be implemented in the data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$  by first associating to the Schottky group a pair of Fuchsian Schottky groups in  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  that correspond, via Bers' simultaneous uniformization, to a decomposition of  $X_{\mathbb{C}}$  into two Riemann surfaces with boundary, and then making these groups act via the  $SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \times SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  representation of the Lefschetz module. One obtains in this way a noncommutative version of the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$ , given by the group ring of  $\Gamma$  acting via the representation of  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  associated to the Lefschetz operator. The hyperbolic geometry is encoded in the Beltrami differentials of Bers' simultaneous uniformization. In particular, we show in §3.3 that in the case of a real embedding  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ , where the corresponding Riemann surface is an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve, the choice of the Schottky group and of the quasi-circle giving the simultaneous uniformization is determined canonically.

This result allows us to reinterpret Deninger's regularized determinants describing the archimedean factors in terms of an integration theory on the "noncommutative manifold"  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$ . Theorem 3.19 shows that the alternating product of the  $\Gamma$ -factors  $L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^q(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{C}), s)$  is recovered from a particular zeta function of the spectral triple. In §3.5 we interpret this alternating product as a Reidemeister torsion associated to the fiber at arithmetic infinity.

The second part of the paper (Section 4 and 6) concentrates on Manin's description of the dual graph  $\mathcal{G}$  of the "fiber at infinity" of an arithmetic surface in terms of the infinite tangle of bounded geodesics in the hyperbolic handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$ .

More precisely, the suspension flow  $\mathcal{S}_T$  of a dynamical system  $T$  provides our model of the dual graph  $\mathcal{G}$  of the fiber at infinity, which maps surjectively over the tangle of bounded geodesics considered in [24]. The map  $T$  is a subshift of finite type which partially captures the dynamical properties of the action of the Schottky group on its limit set  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}$ .

The first cohomology group of  $\mathcal{S}_T$  is the ordered cohomology of the dynamical system  $T$  in the sense of [8] [34] and it provides a model of the first cohomology of the dual graph of the fiber at infinity. The group  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$  carries a natural filtration, which is related to the periodic orbits of the subshift of finite type. We give an explicit combinatorial description of homology and cohomology of  $\mathcal{S}_T$  and of their pairing.

We define a *dynamical cohomology*  $H_{dyn}^1$  of the fiber at infinity as the graded space associated to the filtration of  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ . Similarly, we introduce a *dynamical homology*  $H_1^{dyn}$  as the sum of the spaces in the filtration of  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ . These two

graded spaces have an involution which plays a role analogous to the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on the cohomological theories of Section 2.

Theorem 5.7 relates the dynamical cohomology to the archimedean cohomology by showing that the archimedean cohomology sits as a particular subspace of the dynamical cohomology in a way that is compatible with the grading and the action of the real Frobenius. The map that realizes this identification is obtained using the description of holomorphic differentials on the Riemann surface as Poincaré series over the Schottky group, which also plays a fundamental role in the description of the Green function in terms of geodesics in [24]. Similarly, in Theorem 5.12 we identify a subspace of the dynamical homology that is isomorphic to the image of the archimedean cohomology under the duality isomorphism acting on  $\mathbb{H}(\text{Cone}(N))$ . This way we reinterpret this arithmetic duality as induced by the pairing of dynamical homology and cohomology.

The Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  associated to the subshift of finite type  $T$  ([17] [18]) acts on the space  $\mathcal{L}$  of cochains defining the dynamical cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ . This algebra carries a refined information on the action of the Schottky group on its limit set.

We introduce a Dirac operator  $D$  on the Hilbert space of cochains  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{L} \oplus \mathcal{L}$ , whose restriction to the subspaces isomorphic to the archimedean cohomology and its dual, recovers the Frobenius-type operator  $\Phi$  of Section 2. We prove in Theorem 6.6 that the data  $(\mathcal{O}_A, \mathcal{H}, D)$  define a spectral triple. In Proposition 6.8 we show how to recover the local Euler factor from these data.

In §7 we describe the analog at arithmetic infinity of the  $p$ -adic reduction map considered in [24] and [33] for Mumford curves, which is realized in terms of certain finite graphs in a quotient of the Bruhat–Tits tree. The corresponding object at arithmetic infinity is, as originally suggested in [24], constructed out of arcs of geodesics in the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  which have one end on the Riemann surface  $X_{/C}$  and whose asymptotic behavior is prescribed by a limiting point on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ . The resulting space is a well-known construction in noncommutative geometry, namely the homotopy quotient  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \mathbb{H}^3$  of the space  $\mathcal{O}_A = C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ . Similarly, our geometric model  $\mathcal{S}_T$  of the dual graph of the fiber at arithmetic infinity is the homotopy quotient  $\mathcal{S} \times_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{R}$  of the noncommutative space described by the crossed product algebra  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$ .

In the last section of the paper, we outline some possible further questions and directions for future investigations.

Since this paper draws from the language and techniques of different fields (arithmetic geometry, noncommutative geometry, dynamical systems), we thought it necessary to include enough background material to make the paper sufficiently self contained and addressed to readers with different research interests.

**Acknowledgments.** In the course of this project we learned many things from different people to whom we are very grateful: to Paolo Aluffi for useful discussions

and suggestions; to Alain Connes for beautiful lectures on spectral triples and noncommutative geometry that inspired the early development of this work and for many discussions, comments and suggestions that greatly improved the final version of the paper; to Curt McMullen for very enlightening conversations on the dynamics of the shift  $T$  and on Schottky groups; to Victor Nistor for various remarks on cross product algebras; to Mika Seppälä for useful information on real algebraic curves; and of course to Yuri Manin for sharing his vision and enlightenment on many aspects of this project.

### 1.1. Preliminary notions and notation

The three-dimensional real hyperbolic space  $\mathbb{H}^3$  is the quotient

$$\mathbb{H}^3 = \mathrm{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})/\mathrm{SU}(2). \quad (1.1)$$

It can also be described as the upper half space  $\mathbb{H}^3 \simeq \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}^+$  endowed with the hyperbolic metric.

The group  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  is the group of orientation preserving isometries of  $\mathbb{H}^3$ . The action is given by

$$\gamma : (z, y) \mapsto \left( \frac{(az + b)\overline{(cz + d)} + a\bar{c}y^2}{|cz + d|^2 + |c|^2y^2}, \frac{y|ad - bc|}{|cz + d|^2 + |c|^2y^2} \right), \quad (1.2)$$

for  $(z, y) \in \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}^+$  and

$$\gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{C}).$$

The complex projective line  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  can be identified with the conformal boundary at infinity of  $\mathbb{H}^3$ . The action (1.2) extends to an action on  $\overline{\mathbb{H}^3} := \mathbb{H}^3 \cup \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , where  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  acts on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  by fractional linear transformations

$$\gamma : z \mapsto \frac{az + b}{cz + d}.$$

We begin by recalling some classical facts about Kleinian and Fuchsian groups ([4] [7] [31]).

A *Fuchsian group*  $G$  is a discrete subgroup of  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ , the group of orientation preserving isometries of the hyperbolic plane  $\mathbb{H}^2$ . A *Kleinian group* is a discrete subgroup of  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ , the group of orientation preserving isometries of 3-dimensional real hyperbolic space  $\mathbb{H}^3$ .

For  $g \geq 1$ , a *Schottky group* of rank  $g$  is a discrete subgroup  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ , which is purely loxodromic and isomorphic to a free group of rank  $g$ . Schottky groups are particular examples of Kleinian groups.

A Schottky group that is specified by real parameters so that it lies in  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  is called a *Fuchsian Schottky group*. Viewed as a group of isometries of the hyperbolic plane  $\mathbb{H}^2$ , or equivalently of the Poincaré disk, a Fuchsian Schottky group  $G$  produces a quotient  $G \backslash \mathbb{H}^2$  which is topologically a Riemann surface with boundary.

In the case  $g = 1$ , the choice of a Schottky group  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  amounts to the choice of an element  $q \in \mathbb{C}^*$ ,  $|q| < 1$ . This acts on  $\mathbb{H}^3$  by

$$\begin{pmatrix} q^{1/2} & 0 \\ 0 & q^{-1/2} \end{pmatrix} (z, y) = (qz, |q|y).$$

One sees that  $\mathfrak{X} = \mathbb{H}^3 / (q^{\mathbb{Z}})$  is a solid torus with the elliptic curve  $X_{/\mathbb{C}} = \mathbb{C}^* / (q^{\mathbb{Z}})$  as its boundary at infinity. This space is known in the theory of quantum gravity as Euclidean BTZ black hole [28].

In general, for  $g \geq 1$ , the quotient space

$$\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma := \Gamma \backslash \mathbb{H}^3 \tag{1.3}$$

is topologically a handlebody of genus  $g$ . These also form an interesting class of Euclidean black holes ([28]).

We denote by  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ , the *limit set* of the action of  $\Gamma$ . This is the smallest nonempty closed  $\Gamma$ -invariant subset of  $\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . Since  $\Gamma$  acts freely and properly discontinuously on  $\mathbb{H}^3$ , the set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  is contained in the sphere at infinity  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . This set can also be described as the closure of the set of the attractive and repelling fixed points  $z^\pm(g)$  of the loxodromic elements  $g \in \Gamma$ . In the case  $g = 1$  the limit set consists of two points, but for  $g \geq 2$  the limit set is usually a fractal of some Hausdorff dimension  $0 \leq \delta_H = \dim_H(\Lambda_\Gamma) < 2$ .

We denote by  $\Omega_\Gamma$  the *domain of discontinuity* of  $\Gamma$ , that is, the complement of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . The quotient

$$X_{/\mathbb{C}} = \Gamma \backslash \Omega_\Gamma \tag{1.4}$$

is a Riemann surface of genus  $g$  and the covering  $\Omega_\Gamma \rightarrow X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  is called a *Schottky uniformization* of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . Every complex Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  admits a Schottky uniformization.

The handlebody (1.3) can be compactified by adding the conformal boundary at infinity  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  to obtain

$$\overline{\mathfrak{X}}_\Gamma := \mathfrak{X}_\Gamma \cup X_{/\mathbb{C}} = \Gamma \backslash (\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_\Gamma). \tag{1.5}$$

Let  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^g$  be a set of generators of the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ . We write  $g_{i+g} = g_i^{-1}$ . There are  $2g$  Jordan curves  $\gamma_k$  on the sphere at infinity  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , with pairwise disjoint interiors  $D_k$ , such that the elements  $g_k$  are given by fractional linear transformations that map the interior of  $\gamma_k$  to the exterior of  $\gamma_j$  with  $|k - j| = g$ . The curves  $\gamma_k$  give a *marking* of the Schottky group.

The choice of a Schottky uniformization for the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  provides a choice of a set of generators  $a_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, g$ , for  $\mathrm{Ker}(I_*)$ , where  $I_* : H_1(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow$

$H_1(\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma, \mathbb{Z})$  is the map induced by the inclusion of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  in  $\overline{\mathfrak{X}}_\Gamma$  as the conformal boundary at infinity. The  $a_i$  are the images under the quotient map  $\Omega_\Gamma \rightarrow X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  of the Jordan curves  $\gamma_i$ .

Recall that if  $\mathbb{K}$  is a number field with  $n = [\mathbb{K} : \mathbb{Q}]$ , there are  $n$  archimedean primes which correspond to the embeddings  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ . Among these  $n$  archimedean primes, there are  $r$  embeddings into  $\mathbb{R}$ , and  $s$  pairs of conjugate embeddings in  $\mathbb{C}$  not contained in  $\mathbb{R}$ , so that  $n = r + 2s$ .

If  $X$  is an arithmetic surface over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$ , then at each archimedean prime we obtain a Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . If the archimedean prime corresponds to a real embedding, the corresponding Riemann surface has a real structure, namely it is a smooth real algebraic curve  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$ .

A smooth real algebraic curve  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  is a Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  together with an involution  $\iota : X_{/\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  induced by complex conjugation  $z \mapsto \bar{z}$ . The fixed point set  $X_\iota$  of the involution is the set of real points  $X_\iota = X_{/\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R})$  of  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$ . If  $X_\iota \neq \emptyset$ , the components of  $X_\iota$  are simple closed geodesics on  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$ . A smooth real algebraic curve is called *orthosymmetric* if  $X_\iota \neq \emptyset$  and the complement  $X_{/\mathbb{R}} \setminus X_\iota$  consists of two connected components. If  $X_\iota \neq \emptyset$ , then  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  can always be reduced to the orthosymmetric case upon passing to a double cover.

Even when not explicitly stated, all Hilbert spaces and algebras of operators we consider will be *separable*, i.e. they admit a dense (in the norm topology) countable subset.

An *involutive algebra* is an algebra over  $\mathbb{C}$  with a conjugate linear involution  $*$  (the adjoint) which is an anti-isomorphism. A  *$C^*$ -algebra* is an involutive normed algebra, which is complete in the norm, and satisfies  $\|ab\| \leq \|a\| \cdot \|b\|$  and  $\|a^*a\| = \|a\|^2$ . The analogous notions can be defined for algebras over  $\mathbb{R}$ .

## 2. Cohomological constructions

In this chapter we give an explicit description of a cohomological theory for the archimedean fiber of an Arakelov surface. The general theory, valid for any arithmetic variety, was defined in [15]. This construction provides an alternative definition and a refinement of the *archimedean cohomology*  $H_{\text{ar}}^*$  introduced by Deninger in [20]. The spaces  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$  (Definition 2.8) are *infinite-dimensional* real vector spaces endowed with a monodromy operator  $N$  and an endomorphism  $\Phi$  (Section 2.5). The groups  $H_{\text{ar}}^*$  can be identified with the subspace of the  $N$ -invariants (i.e.  $\text{Ker}(N)$ ) over which (the restriction of)  $\Phi$  acts in the following way. The monodromy operator determines an integer, even graduation on  $H(\tilde{X}^*) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H(\tilde{X}^*)$  where each graded piece is still *infinite dimensional*. We will refer to it as the *weight graduation*. This graduation induces a corresponding one on the subspace  $H(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} := \bigoplus_{\geq 2p} gr_{2p}^w H(\tilde{X}^*)$ . The summands  $gr_{2p}^w H(\tilde{X}^*)$  are *finite-dimensional* real vector spaces on which  $\Phi$  acts as a multiplication by the weight  $p$ .

When  $X_{/\kappa}$  is a nonsingular, projective curve defined over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ , the description of  $gr_{2p}^w H(X^*)$  ( $\cdot \geq 2p$ ) is particularly easy. Proposition 2.23 shows that  $H(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  is isomorphic to an infinite direct sum of Hodge–Tate twisted copies of the same finite-dimensional vector space. For  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$ , this space coincides with the de Rham cohomology  $H_{DR}^*(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R})$  of the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ .

For the reader acquainted with the classical theory of mixed Hodge structures for an algebraic degeneration over a disk (and its arithmetical counterpart theory of Frobenius weights), it will be immediately evident that the construction of the arithmetical cohomology defined in this chapter runs parallel with the classical one defined by Steenbrink in [48] and refined by M. Saito in [43]. The notation  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$ ,  $H(X^*)$ ,  $H(Y)$  followed in this section is purely formal. Namely,  $\tilde{X}^*$ ,  $X^*$  and  $Y$  are only symbols although this choice is motivated by the analogy with Steenbrink’s construction in which  $\tilde{X}^*$ ,  $X^*$  and  $Y$  describe resp. the geometric generic fiber and the complement of the special fiber  $Y$  in the model. The space  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$  is the hypercohomology group of a double complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  of real, differential twisted forms (Section 2.1: (2.1)) on which one defines a structure of polarized Lefschetz module that descends to its hypercohomology (Theorem 2.6 and Corollary 2.7).

The whole theory is inspired by the expectation that the fibers at infinity of an arithmetic variety should be thought to be semistable and more specifically to be “maximally degenerate or totally split”. We like to think that the construction of the complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  on the Riemann surface  $X_{/\kappa}$ , whose structure and behavior gives the arithmetical information related to the “mysterious” fibers at infinity of an arithmetic surface, fits in with Arakelov’s intuition that hermitian geometry on  $X_{/\kappa}$  is enough to recover the intersection geometry on the fibers at infinity.

### 2.1. A bigraded complex with monodromy and Lefschetz operators

Let  $X_{/\kappa}$  be a smooth, projective curve defined over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ . For  $a, b \in \mathbb{N}$ , we shall denote by  $(A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}}$  the abelian group of real differential forms (analytic or  $C^\infty$ ) on  $X_{/\kappa}$  of type  $(a, b) + (b, a)$ .

For  $p \in \mathbb{Z}$ , the expression  $(A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}}(p)$  means the  $p$ -th Hodge–Tate twist of  $(A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}}$ , i.e. ,

$$(A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}}(p) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p (A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}}.$$

Let  $i, j, k \in \mathbb{Z}$ . We consider the following complex ([15], §4 for the general construction)

$$K^{i,j,k} = \begin{cases} \bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=j+1 \\ |a-b| \leq 2k-i}} (A^{a,b} \oplus A^{b,a})_{\mathbb{R}} \left( \frac{1+j-i}{2} \right) & \text{if } 1+j-i \equiv 0(2), k \geq \max(0, i), \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{2.1}$$

On the complex  $K^{i,j,k}$  one defines the following differentials:

$$\begin{aligned} d' : K^{i,j,k} &\rightarrow K^{i+1,j+1,k+1}, & d'' : K^{i,j,k} &\rightarrow K^{i+1,j+1,k} \\ d' &= \partial + \bar{\partial} & d'' &= P^\perp \sqrt{-1}(\bar{\partial} - \partial), \end{aligned}$$

with  $P^\perp$  the orthogonal projection onto  $K^{i+1,j+1,k}$ . These maps satisfy the property that  $d'^2 = 0 = d''^2$  ([15] Lemma 4.2). Since  $X/\kappa$  is a projective variety (hence Kähler) one uses the existence of the fundamental real (closed)  $(1, 1)$ -form  $\omega$  to define the following *Lefschetz map*  $l$ . The operator  $N$  that is described in the next formula plays the role of the logarithm of the *local monodromy at infinity*

$$N : K^{i,j,k} \rightarrow K^{i+2,j,k+1}, \quad N(f) = (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-1}f \tag{2.2}$$

$$l : K^{i,j,k} \rightarrow K^{i,j+2,k}, \quad l(f) = (2\pi\sqrt{-1})f \wedge \omega. \tag{2.3}$$

These endomorphisms are known to commute with  $d'$  and  $d''$  and satisfy  $[l, N] = 0$  (*op.cit.* Lemma 4.2). One sets  $K^{i,j} = \bigoplus_k K^{i,j,k}$  and writes  $K^* = \bigoplus_{i+j=*} K^{i,j}$  to denote the simple complex endowed with the total differential  $d = d' + d''$  and with the action of the operators  $N$  and  $l$ .

**Remark 2.1.** In the complex (2.1) the second index  $j$  is subject to the constraint  $a + b = j + 1$  (where  $a + b$  is the total degree of the differential forms). This implies that  $j$  assumes only a finite number of values:  $-1 \leq j \leq 1$ , in fact  $0 \leq a + b \leq 2$  ( $X$  is a Riemann surface).

### 2.2. Polarized Hodge–Lefschetz structure

In this section we will review the theory of polarized bigraded Hodge–Lefschetz modules due to Deligne and Saito. The main result is Theorem 2.6 which states that the complex  $K^\vee$  defined in (2.1) together with the maps  $N$  and  $l$  as in (2.2) and (2.3) determine a Lefschetz module. A detailed description of the structure of polarized Hodge–Lefschetz modules is contained in [43]; for a short and quite pleasant exposition we refer to [22].

**Definition 2.2.** A bigraded Lefschetz module  $(K^\vee, L_1, L_2)$  is a bigraded real vector space  $K = \bigoplus_{i,j} K^{i,j}$  with endomorphisms

$$L_1 : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{i+2,j} \quad L_2 : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{i,j+2} \tag{2.4}$$

satisfying  $[L_1, L_2] = 0$ . Furthermore, the operators  $L_i$  are required to satisfy the following conditions

1.  $L_1^i : K^{-i,j} \rightarrow K^{i,j}$  is an isomorphism for  $i > 0$
2.  $L_2^j : K^{i,-j} \rightarrow K^{i,j}$  is an isomorphism for  $j > 0$ .

Bigraded Lefschetz modules correspond to representations of the Lie group  $SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \times SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  ([22] or [43]). Therefore, given a bigraded Lefschetz module  $(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, L_1, L_2)$  this corresponds to the representation

$$\sigma : SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \times SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \text{Aut}(K^{\cdot,\cdot})$$

satisfying

$$\sigma \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} b & 0 \\ 0 & b^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \right\} (x) = a^i b^j x \quad \text{for } x \in K^{i,j} \tag{2.5}$$

$$d\sigma \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, 0 \right\} = L_1 \tag{2.6}$$

$$d\sigma \left\{ 0, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = L_2. \tag{2.7}$$

The Weyl reflection

$$w = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, \mathbb{R})$$

defines the elements  $\tilde{w} = \{w, w\}$ ,  $w_1 = \{w, 1\}$ ,  $w_2 = \{1, w\} \in SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \times SL(2, \mathbb{R})$ . They determine isomorphisms  $\sigma(\tilde{w}) : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{-i,-j}$ ,  $\sigma(w_1) : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{-i,j}$  and  $\sigma(w_2) : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{i,-j}$ , by taking  $\sigma(w_1) = N^{-i}$  and  $\sigma(w_2)$  the involution determined by the Hodge  $*$  operator, which induces the map  $l^{-j}$  on the primitive cohomology (Definition 2.2 and [53], §V.6).

**Definition 2.3.** A bigraded Lefschetz module is a Hodge–Lefschetz module if each  $K^{i,j}$  carries a pure real Hodge structure and the  $L_i$  (as in Definition 2.2) are morphisms of real Hodge structures.

For convenience, we recall the definition of a *pure Hodge structure* over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ . For a summary of mixed Hodge theory we refer to [49].

**Definition 2.4.** A pure Hodge structure over  $\kappa$  is a finite dimensional  $\mathbb{C}$ -vector space  $H = \bigoplus_{p,q} H^{p,q}$ , together with a conjugate linear involution  $c$  and in case  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$  a  $\mathbb{C}$ -linear involution  $F_\infty$  such that:

1.  $c(H^{p,q}) = H^{q,p}$ .
2. The inclusion of  $H_{\mathbb{R}} := H^{c=id}$  into  $H$  induces an isomorphism  $H = H_{\mathbb{R}} \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}$ .
3. In case  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $F_\infty$  commutes with  $c$  and verifies  $F_\infty(H^{p,q}) = H^{q,p}$ . The action of  $F_\infty$  on the space  $H^{p,p}$  decomposes it as  $H^{p,p} = H^{p,+} \oplus H^{p,-}$ . We denote the dimensions of the eigenspaces by  $h^{p,\pm} := \dim_{\mathbb{C}} H^{p,\pm(-1)^p}$ .

In the case  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $H$  is called a real, pure Hodge structure.

**Example 2.5.** An example of a pure Hodge structure is given by the singular (Betti) cohomology  $H_B^*(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{C})$  on the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . The  $\mathbb{C}$ -linear involution  $F_\infty$  is induced by the complex conjugation on the Riemann surface.

On a bigraded Lefschetz module  $(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, L_1, L_2)$  we consider additional data of a differential  $d$  and a pairing  $\psi$ :

$$d : K^{i,j} \rightarrow K^{i+1,j+1}, \quad \psi : K^{-i,-j} \otimes K^{i,j} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}(1),$$

satisfying the following properties:

1.  $d^2 = 0 = [L_i, d]$
2.  $\psi(x, y) = -\psi(y, x)$
3.  $\psi(dx, y) = \psi(x, dy)$
4.  $\psi(L_i x, y) + \psi(x, L_i y) = 0$
5.  $\psi(\cdot, L_1^i L_2^j \cdot)$  is symmetric and positive definite on  $K^{-i,-j} \cap \text{Ker}(L_1^{i+1}) \cap \text{Ker}(L_2^{j+1})$ .

If  $(K, L_1, L_2, \psi)$  is a polarized bigraded Lefschetz module (i.e.  $(K, L_1, L_2)$  is a bigraded Lefschetz module satisfying the properties 1.-5.), then the bilinear form

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : K \otimes K \rightarrow \mathbb{R}(1), \quad \langle x, y \rangle := \psi(x, \sigma(\tilde{w})y) \tag{2.8}$$

is symmetric and positive definite.

**Theorem 2.6.** *The differential complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  defined in (2.1) endowed with the operators  $L_1 = N$  (2.2) and  $L_2 = l$  (2.3) is a polarized bigraded Lefschetz module. The polarization is given by*

$$\begin{aligned} \psi : K^{-i,-j,k} \otimes K^{i,j,k+i} &\rightarrow \mathbb{R}(1) \\ \psi(x, y) &:= \left( \frac{1}{2\pi\sqrt{-1}} \right) \epsilon(1-j)(-1)^k \int_{X(\mathbb{C})} x \wedge Cy. \end{aligned}$$

Here, for  $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ :  $\epsilon(m) := (-1)^{\frac{m(m+1)}{2}}$  and  $C(x) := (\sqrt{-1})^{a-b}x$  is the Weil operator, for  $x$  a differential form of type  $(a, b)$  (cf. [53] §V.1).

*Proof.* We refer to [15] Lemmas 4.2, 4.5, 4.6 and Proposition 4.7. □

Such elaborate construction on the complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  allows one to set up a harmonic theory (as in [15] pp. 350-1), so that the polarized bigraded Lefschetz module structure passes to the hypercohomology  $\mathbb{H}^*(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, d)$ . More precisely, one defines a Laplace operator on  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  as

$$\square := d({}^t d) + ({}^t d)d$$

where  ${}^t d$  is the transpose of  $d$  relative to the bilinear form  $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$  defined in (2.8). Then,  $\square$  commutes with the action of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  ([53] Lemma p. 153). Using the properties of the bilinear form  $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$  one gets

$$\mathbb{H}^*(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, d) = \text{Ker}(d) \cap \text{Ker}({}^t d) = \text{Ker}(\square)$$

and  $\square$  is invariant for the action of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ . The following result holds

**Corollary 2.7.** *The data  $(\mathbb{H}^*(K^\bullet, d), N, l, \psi)$  define a polarized, bigraded Hodge–Lefschetz module.*

*Proof.* The statement follows from the isomorphism of complexes

$$K^\bullet \simeq \text{Ker}(\square) \oplus \text{Image}(\square)$$

and from the fact that  $d = 0$  on  $\text{Ker}(\square)$  and that the complex  $\text{Image}(\square)$  is  $d$ -acyclic. These three statements taken together imply the existence of an induced action of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  on the hypercohomology of  $K^\bullet$  (see [22] for details).  $\square$

### 2.3. Cohomology groups

It follows from the definition of the double complex  $(K^{\bullet, \bullet}, d', d'')$  in (2.1) that the total differential  $d = d' + d''$  satisfies  $d^2 = 0$  and commutes with the operator  $N$ . In particular,  $d$  induces a differential on the graded groups

$$\text{Ker}(N)^{\bullet, \bullet} = \ker(N : K^{\bullet, \bullet} \rightarrow K^{\bullet+2, \bullet}), \quad \text{Coker}(N)^{\bullet, \bullet} = \text{coker}(N : K^{\bullet, \bullet} \rightarrow K^{\bullet+2, \bullet})$$

as well as on the mapping cone of  $N$

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Cone}(N)^{\bullet, \bullet} &= \text{Cone}(N : K^{\bullet, \bullet} \rightarrow K^{\bullet+2, \bullet}) := K^{\bullet, \bullet}[1] \oplus K^{\bullet+2, \bullet}, \\ D(a, b) &= (-d(a), N(a) + d(b)). \end{aligned}$$

**Definition 2.8.** For any nonnegative integer  $q$  and  $p \in \mathbb{Z}$ , define

$$gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) = \frac{\text{Ker}(d : K^{q-2p, q-1} \rightarrow K^{q-2p+1, q})}{\text{Im}(d : K^{q-2p-1, q-2} \rightarrow K^{q-2p, q-1})}, \quad (2.9)$$

$$gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y) = \frac{\text{Ker}(d : \text{Ker}(N)^{q-2p, q-1} \rightarrow \text{Ker}(N)^{q-2p+1, q})}{\text{Im}(d : \text{Ker}(N)^{q-2p-1, q-2} \rightarrow \text{Ker}(N)^{q-2p, q-1})}, \quad (2.10)$$

$$gr_{2p}^w H_Y^q(X) = \frac{\text{Ker}(d : \text{Coker}(N)^{q-2p, q-3} \rightarrow \text{Coker}(N)^{q-2p+1, q-2})}{\text{Im}(d : \text{Coker}(N)^{q-2p-1, q-4} \rightarrow \text{Coker}(N)^{q-2p, q-3})}, \quad (2.11)$$

$$gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) = \frac{\text{Ker}(d : \text{Cone}(N)^{q-2p+1, q-2} \rightarrow \text{Cone}(N)^{q-2p+2, q-1})}{\text{Im}(d : \text{Cone}(N)^{q-2p, q-3} \rightarrow \text{Cone}(N)^{q-2p+1, q-2})}. \quad (2.12)$$

We define  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*) := \mathbb{H}^q(K^\bullet)$ ,  $H^q(Y) := \mathbb{H}^q(\text{Ker}(N)^\bullet)$ ,  $H^q(X^*) := \mathbb{H}^q(\text{Cone}(N)^\bullet)$  and  $H_Y^q(X) := \mathbb{H}^q(\text{Coker}(N)^\bullet)$ . These groups are identified with

$$H^q(\tilde{X}^*) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*), \quad H^q(Y) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y),$$

$$H^q(X^*) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*), \quad H_Y^q(X) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^q(X).$$

**Remark 2.9.** Note that the even graduation is a consequence of the parity condition  $q + r \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$  imposed on the indices of the complex (2.1).

Because  $\dim X/\kappa = 1$ , it is easy to verify from the definition of  $K^\bullet$  that  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$  and  $H^q(Y)$  are  $\neq 0$  only for  $q = 0, 1, 2$ . Furthermore, one easily finds that  $H^q(X^*) \neq 0$  for  $q = 0, 1, 2, 3$  and  $H_Y^q(X) \neq 0$  only when  $q = 2, 3, 4$ .

The definition of these groups is inspired by the theory of degenerations of Hodge structures ([48]) where the symbols  $\tilde{X}^*$ ,  $Y$  and  $X^*$  have a precise geometric meaning: namely, they denote resp. the smooth fiber, the special fiber and the punctured space  $\mathcal{X} - Y$ , where  $\mathcal{X}$  is the chosen model for a degeneration over a disk. In our setup instead,  $\tilde{X}^*$ ,  $Y$ , and  $X^*$  are only symbols but the general formalism associated to the hypercohomology of a double complex endowed with an operator commuting with the total differential can still be pursued and in fact it gives interesting arithmetical information. In the following we will show that the groups that we have just introduced enjoy similar properties as the graded quotients of the weight filtration on the corresponding cohomology groups of [48].

It is important to remark that the hypercohomology of the complex  $\text{Cone}(N)^\bullet$  contains both the information coming from the cohomologies of  $\text{Ker}(N)^\bullet$  and  $\text{Coker}(N)^\bullet$ , as the following proposition shows.

**Proposition 2.10.** *The following equality holds:*

$$\begin{aligned} H^q(X^*) &= \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) = \\ &= \bigoplus_{2p \leq q-1} gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y) \oplus gr_q^w H^q(X^*) \oplus gr_{q+1}^w H^q(X^*) \oplus \bigoplus_{2p > q+1} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^{q+1}(X). \end{aligned}$$

The proof of Proposition 2.10 as well as an explicit description of each addendum in the sum is a consequence of the following lemmas.

**Lemma 2.11.** *For all  $p \in \mathbb{Z}$  and for  $q \in \mathbb{N}$  there are exact sequences*

$$\dots \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{N} gr_{2p-2}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^{q+1}(X^*) \rightarrow \dots \tag{2.13}$$

$$\dots \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H_Y^{q+1}(X) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^{q+1}(Y) \rightarrow \dots \tag{2.14}$$

Furthermore, the maps  $gr_{2p}^w H_Y^q(X) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y)$  in (2.14) are zero unless  $q = 2p$ , in which case they coincide with the morphism

$$\frac{(A^{p-1,p-1})_{\mathbb{R}}(p-1)}{\text{Im}(d'')} \xrightarrow{2\pi\sqrt{-1}d'd''} \text{Ker} \left( d' : (A^{p,p})_{\mathbb{R}}(p) \rightarrow \left( \bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=2p+1 \\ |a-b| \leq 1}} A^{a,b} \right)_{\mathbb{R}}(p) \right).$$

*Proof.* We refer to [6]: Lemmas 3 and Lemma 4 and to [15]: Lemma 4.3.  $\square$

**Lemma 2.12.** *For all  $p \in \mathbb{Z}$  and for  $q \in \mathbb{N}$ :*

1. *The group  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y)$  is zero unless  $2p \leq q$ , in which case*

$$gr_{2p}^w H^q(Y) = \begin{cases} \text{Ker}(d' : (A^{p,p})_{\mathbb{R}}(p) \rightarrow \bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=2p+1 \\ |a-b|\leq 1}} (A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p)) & \text{if } q = 2p \\ \frac{\text{Ker}(d' : (\bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=q \\ |a-b|\leq q-2p}} A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p) \rightarrow (\bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=q+1 \\ |a-b|\leq q-2p+1}} A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p))}{\text{Im}(d')} & \text{if } q \geq 2p + 1. \end{cases}$$

2. *The group  $gr_{2p}^w H_Y^q(X)$  is zero unless  $2p \geq q$ , in which case*

$$gr_{2p}^w H_Y^q(X) = \begin{cases} \text{Coker}(d'' : (\bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=2p-3 \\ |a-b|\leq 1}} A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p-1) \rightarrow (A^{p-1,p-1})_{\mathbb{R}}(p-1)) & \text{if } q = 2p \\ \frac{\text{Ker}(d'' : (\bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=q-2 \\ |a-b|\leq 2p-q}} A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p-1) \rightarrow (\bigoplus_{\substack{a+b=q-1 \\ |a-b|\leq 2p-q-1}} A^{a,b})_{\mathbb{R}}(p-1))}{\text{Im}(d'')} & \text{if } q \leq 2p - 1. \end{cases}$$

*Proof.* We refer to [15] Lemmas 4.3.  $\square$

*Proof* (of Prop. 2.10). It is a straightforward consequence of Lemma 2.11.  $\square$

**Corollary 2.13.** *The monodromy map*

$$N : gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \rightarrow gr_{2(p-1)}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \quad \text{is} \quad \begin{cases} \text{injective} & \text{if } q < 2p - 1 \\ \text{bijective} & \text{if } q = 2p - 1 \\ \text{surjective} & \text{if } q \geq 2p. \end{cases}$$

*Therefore, the following sequences are exact*

$$q \geq 2p : \quad 0 \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{N} gr_{2(p-1)}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \rightarrow 0, \quad (2.15)$$

$$q \leq 2(p-1) : \quad 0 \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{N} gr_{2(p-1)}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^{q+1}(X^*) \rightarrow 0. \quad (2.16)$$

*In particular, one obtains*

$$\text{Ker}(N) = \begin{cases} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) & \text{if } q \geq 2p \\ 0 & \text{if } q \leq 2p - 1. \end{cases}$$

*Proof.* This follows from Lemma 2.11: (2.13) and from Lemma 2.12.  $\square$

**Remark 2.14.** For future use, we explicitly remark that when  $q \geq 2p$  one has the following decomposition:

$$\begin{aligned} gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) &= \bigoplus_{k \geq q-2p} \frac{\text{Ker}(d : K^{q-2p, q-1, k} \rightarrow \dots)}{\text{Im}(d)} = \\ &= gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) \bigoplus_{k \geq q-2p+1} \frac{\text{Ker}(d : K^{q-2p, q-1, k} \rightarrow \dots)}{\text{Im}(d)}. \end{aligned} \tag{2.17}$$

Hence, when  $q = 0, 1, 2$ , the group  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  coincides with the homology of the complex

$$(\bigoplus_{k \geq q-2p} K^{q-2p, q-1, k}, d)$$

at  $k = q - 2p \geq 0$ .

It is important to recall that the presence of a structure of a polarized Lefschetz module on the hypercohomology  $\mathbb{H}^*(K, d) = H^*(\tilde{X}^*)$  allows one to state the following results.

**Proposition 2.15.** For  $q, p \in \mathbb{Z}$  satisfying the conditions  $q - 2p > 0, q \geq 0$ , the operator  $N$  induces isomorphisms

$$N^{q-2p} : gr_{2(q-p)}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{\simeq} gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*). \tag{2.18}$$

Furthermore, for  $q \geq 2p$  the isomorphisms (2.18) induce corresponding isomorphisms

$$(gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \simeq) gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*) \xrightarrow[\simeq]{N^{2p-q}} gr_{2(q-p+1)}^w H^{q+1}(X^*). \tag{2.19}$$

*Proof.* For the proof of (2.18) we refer to [15]: Proposition 4.8. For a proof of the isomorphisms (2.19) we refer to Corollary 2.13 and either the proof of Proposition 2.21 or to [15].  $\square$

#### 2.4. Relation with Deligne cohomology

The main feature of the complex (2.1) is its relation with the *real Deligne cohomology* of  $X_{/\kappa}$ . This cohomology (Definition 2.16) measures how the natural real structure on the singular cohomology of a smooth projective variety behaves with respect to the de Rham filtration. One of the most interesting properties of Deligne cohomology is its connection with arithmetic. Proposition 2.18 describes a precise relation between the ranks of some real Deligne cohomology groups and the orders of pole, at non-positive integers, of the  $\Gamma$ -factors attached to a (real) Hodge

structure  $H = \bigoplus_{p,q} H^{p,q}$  over  $\mathbb{C}$  (or  $\mathbb{R}$ ). We recall that these factors are defined as ([46])

$$L_{\mathbb{C}}(H, s) = \prod_{p,q} \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s - \min(p, q))^{h^{p,q}} \tag{2.20}$$

$$L_{\mathbb{R}}(H, s) = \prod_{p < q} \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s - p)^{h^{p,q}} \prod_p \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s - p)^{h^{p,+}} \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s - p + 1)^{h^{p,-}}$$

where  $s \in \mathbb{C}$ ,  $h^{p,q} = \dim_{\mathbb{C}} H^{p,q}$  and  $h^{p,\pm}$  is the dimension of the  $\pm(-1)^p$ -eigenspace of the  $\mathbb{C}$ -linear involution  $F_{\infty}$  on  $H$  (Definition 2.4). One sets

$$\Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s) = (2\pi)^{-s} \Gamma(s), \quad \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s) = 2^{-\frac{1}{2}} \pi^{-\frac{s}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right) \quad \text{where} \quad \Gamma(s) = \int_0^{\infty} e^{-t} t^s \frac{dt}{t}. \tag{2.21}$$

These satisfy the Legendre–Gauss duplication formula

$$\Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s) \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s + 1). \tag{2.22}$$

The  $\Gamma$ -function  $\Gamma(s)$  is analytic in the whole complex plane except for simple poles at the non-positive integer points on the real axis.

**Definition 2.16.** The real Deligne cohomology  $H_{\mathcal{D}}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p))$  of a projective, smooth variety  $X/\mathbb{C}$  is the cohomology of the complex

$$\mathbb{R}(p)_{\mathcal{D}} : \mathbb{R}(p) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_{X(\mathbb{C})} \rightarrow \Omega^1 \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow \Omega^{p-1} \rightarrow 0.$$

The first arrow is the inclusion of the constant sheaf of Hodge–Tate twisted constants into the structural sheaf  $\mathbb{R}(p) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \mathbb{R} \subseteq \mathbb{C} \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{X(\mathbb{C})}$  of the manifold.  $\Omega^i$  denotes the sheaf of holomorphic  $i$ -th differential forms on the manifold.

The real Deligne cohomology of  $X/\mathbb{R}$  is defined as the subspace of elements invariant with respect to de Rham conjugation

$$H_{\mathcal{D}}^*(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p)) := H_{\mathcal{D}}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p))^{\bar{F}_{\infty}}.$$

Precisely:  $\bar{F}_{\infty}$  corresponds to de Rham conjugation under the canonical identification between de Rham and Betti cohomology  $H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}) = H_B^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  on the manifold  $X/\mathbb{C}$ .

**Remark 2.17.** To understand correctly the meaning of  $\bar{F}_{\infty}$  in the definition, it is worth recalling that both de Rham and singular cohomology of the manifold  $X/\mathbb{C}$  have real structures. The real structure on the singular cohomology  $H_B^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C} = H_B^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  is given by the  $\mathbb{R}$ -linear involution:  $-$  (on the right-hand side) which is induced by complex conjugation on the coefficients. On the other hand, by GAGA the algebraic de Rham cohomology of  $X/\mathbb{R}$  defines a real structure  $H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C} = H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  on the analytic de Rham cohomology. Complex conjugation on the pair  $(X/\mathbb{C}, \Omega^i)$  induces an  $\mathbb{R}$ -linear involution on the right-hand side called de Rham conjugation. Such de Rham conjugation corresponds to the

operator  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on the Betti cohomology (example 2.5) through the identification  $H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}) = H_B^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  on the manifold  $X/\mathbb{C}$ .

For example, assume that  $X/\mathbb{R}$  is a smooth, real algebraic curve, that is, a symmetric Riemann surface with an involution  $\iota : X/\mathbb{R} \rightarrow X/\mathbb{R}$  induced by the complex conjugation. Then,  $\iota$  determines a corresponding involution  $\iota^*$  in cohomology. On  $H^0(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$  this is the identity, whereas on  $H^2(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$  it reverses the orientation, hence is identified with  $-\text{id}$ . On  $H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$ ,  $\iota^*$  acts as a nontrivial involution that exchanges  $H_{\mathbb{R}}^{1,0}$  and  $H_{\mathbb{R}}^{0,1}$ , hence it separates the cohomology group into two eigenspaces corresponding to the eigenvalues of  $\pm 1$ :  $H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}) = E_1 \oplus E_{-1}$ , with  $\dim E_1 = \dim E_{-1} = g = \text{genus of } X$ . On twisted cohomology groups such as  $H^*(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p))$ ,  $\bar{F}_\infty$  acts as the composition of  $\iota^*$  with the involution that acts on the real Hodge structure  $\mathbb{R}(p) = (2\pi i)^p \mathbb{R} \subset \mathbb{C}$  as  $(-1)^p$ .

From the short exact sequence of complexes

$$0 \rightarrow \Omega_{<p}[-1] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}(p)_{\mathcal{D}} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}(p) \rightarrow 0$$

one gets the following long exact cohomology sequence that explains the statement we made at the beginning of this chapter ( $F^p H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}) =$  the Hodge filtration on de Rham cohomology of the complex manifold)

$$\begin{aligned} \dots \rightarrow H^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) &\rightarrow H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})/F^p \rightarrow H_{\mathcal{D}}^{*+1}(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\ &\rightarrow H^{*+1}(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \rightarrow \dots \end{aligned}$$

**Proposition 2.18.** *Let  $X/\kappa$  be a smooth, projective variety over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ . Let  $i, m$  be two integers satisfying the conditions:  $i \geq 0, 2m \leq i$ . Set  $n = i + 1 - m$ . Then*

$$-\dim_{\mathbb{R}} H_{\mathcal{D}}^{i+1}(X/\kappa, \mathbb{R}(n)) = \text{ord}_{s=m} L_{\kappa}(H_B^i(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s).$$

Here  $H_B^i(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  denotes Betti's cohomology of the manifold  $X/\mathbb{C}$  endowed with its pure Hodge structure over  $\kappa$ .

*Proof.* We refer to [44] Section 2. □

The definition of the double complex  $K^{\cdot, \cdot}$  in (2.1) was motivated by the expectation that the geometry on  $X/\kappa$  supports interesting arithmetical information on the archimedean fiber(s) of an arithmetic variety. Proposition 2.18 shows that the real Deligne cohomology of  $X/\kappa$  carries such information. The main goal was to construct a complex and an operator  $N$  acting on it which carries interesting arithmetic information so that the hypercohomology of  $\text{Cone}(N)$  becomes isomorphic to the real Deligne cohomology of  $X/\kappa$ . Proposition 4.1 of [15] shows that the complex  $K^{\cdot, \cdot}$  has such property. When  $X/\kappa$  is a projective nonsingular curve defined over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ , this can be stated as follows.

**Proposition 2.19.** *Let  $p, q$  be two nonnegative integer. Then, for each fixed value of  $p$ , the complex  $\text{Cone}(N : K^{q-2p, q-1} \rightarrow K^{q-2p+2, q-1})$  is quasi-isomorphic to the complex*

$$\dots \xrightarrow{d''} \underbrace{(A^{p-2, p-1}(p-1) \oplus A^{p-1, p-2}(p-1))_{\mathbb{R}}}_{q=2p-2} \xrightarrow{d''} \underbrace{A_{\mathbb{R}}^{p-1, p-1}(p-1)}_{q=2p-1} \xrightarrow{2\pi\sqrt{-1}d'd''} \underbrace{A_{\mathbb{R}}^{p, p}(p)}_{q=2p} \xrightarrow{d'} \underbrace{(A^{p+1, p}(p) \oplus A^{p, p+1}(p))_{\mathbb{R}}}_{q=2p+1} \xrightarrow{d'} \dots \quad (2.23)$$

whose homology, in each degree  $q$ , is isomorphic to the real Deligne cohomology of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . Furthermore, taking the  $\bar{F}_{\infty}$ -invariants of such homology yields a description of  $H_{\mathcal{D}}^q(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}(p))$ .

*Proof.* We refer to [15] Section 4, Proposition 4.1. □

**Remark 2.20.** Notice that the left-hand side of (2.23), with respect to the central map  $2\pi\sqrt{-1}d'd''$ , is quasi-isomorphic to the complex obtained by exchanging the map  $d'$  with  $d''$ .

**Proposition 2.21.** *For  $q \geq 2p \geq 0$ , the following isomorphisms hold:*

$$H_{\mathcal{D}}^q(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^{q+1}(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R}(q+1-p)) \quad (2.24)$$

$$H_{\mathcal{D}}^q(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^{q+1}(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R}(q+1-p))^{(-1)^q \bar{F}_{\infty} = id}. \quad (2.25)$$

*Proof.* We consider in detail the case  $q = 2p$ . From Proposition 2.15, the following composite map ( $N^2$ ) is an isomorphism

$$gr_{2(p+1)}^w H^{2p}(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{N_{2(p+1)}} gr_{2p}^w H^{2p}(\tilde{X}^*) \xrightarrow{N_{2p}} gr_{2(p-1)}^w H^{2p}(\tilde{X}^*),$$

where we use the notation  $N_{2p} = N|_{gr_{2p}^w H^{2p}(\tilde{X}^*)}$ . This implies, using the results of Corollary 2.13, that  $gr_{2p}^w H^{2p}(X^*) = \text{Ker} N_{2p}$  is mapped isomorphically to the group  $gr_{2(p+1)}^w H^{2p+1}(X^*) = \text{Coker}(N_{2(p+1)})$ : this isomorphism is induced by the sequence of maps (2.13) in Lemma 2.11 (case  $q = 2p$ ). It follows from Proposition 2.19 that  $gr_{2p}^w H^{2p}(X^*) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^{2p}(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R}(p))$  and that

$$gr_{2p}^w H^{2p}(X^*)^{\bar{F}_{\infty} = id} \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^{2p}(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}(p)).$$

Similarly, one gets from the same proposition that

$$gr_{2(p+1)}^w H^{2p+1}(X^*) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^{2p+1}(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{R}(p+1)),$$

hence we obtain (2.24). Taking the invariants for the action of  $(-1)^q \bar{F}_{\infty}$  yields (2.25). The proof in the case  $q \geq 2p + 1$  is a generalization of the one just finished. For details on this part we refer to [15]: pp 352-3. □

It is well known that the algebraic de Rham cohomology  $H_{DR}^*(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p))$  ( $p \in \mathbb{Z}$ ) is the homology of the complex

$$0 \rightarrow \mathbb{R}(p) \rightarrow A_{\mathbb{R}}^{0,0}(p) \xrightarrow{d'} (A^{1,0} \oplus A^{0,1})_{\mathbb{R}}(p) \xrightarrow{d'} A_{\mathbb{R}}^{1,1}(p) \rightarrow 0; \quad d' = \partial + \bar{\partial}.$$

Using Lemma 2.12 together with Proposition 2.19 and Remark 2.20 we obtain the following description.

**Proposition 2.22.** *Let  $X = X/\kappa$  be a smooth, projective curve over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ . For  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$ , the following description holds:*

$$\begin{aligned} H^0(Y) &= \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^0(Y) = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\ H^1(Y) &= \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^1(Y) = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\ H^2(Y) &= gr_2^w H^2(Y) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^2(Y) = A_{\mathbb{R}}^{1,1}(1) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)). \end{aligned} \tag{2.26}$$

$$\begin{aligned} H_Y^2(X) &= gr_2^w H_Y^2(X) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^2(X) \simeq A_{\mathbb{R}}^{0,0} \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} H_{\mathcal{D}}^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\ H_Y^3(X) &= \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^3(X) \simeq \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} H_{\mathcal{D}}^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\ H_Y^4(X) &= \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^4(X) \simeq \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} H_{\mathcal{D}}^3(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)). \end{aligned} \tag{2.27}$$

For  $X/\mathbb{R}$  similar results hold by taking  $\bar{F}_{\infty}$ -invariants on both sides of the equalities.

Using Proposition 2.22, the description of  $H^q(X^*)$  given in Proposition 2.10 can be made more explicit.

**Proposition 2.23.** *Let  $X/\kappa$  be a smooth, projective curve over  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  or  $\mathbb{R}$ .*

1. For  $\kappa = \mathbb{C}$  and  $\forall q \geq 0$  one has

$$H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = \bigoplus_{q \geq 2p} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*).$$

2. In particular  $H^q(X^*) = 0$  for  $q \notin [0, 3]$  and the following description holds,

$$\begin{aligned}
 H^0(X^*) &= H^0(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = \bigoplus_{p \leq -1} gr_{2p}^w H^0(Y) \oplus gr_0^w H^0(X^*) = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \\
 H^1(X^*) &= H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \oplus (gr_2^w H^1(X^*) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^2(X)) \simeq \\
 &\simeq \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 1} H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p-1)) \\
 H^2(X^*) &= H^2(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^3(X) \simeq \\
 &\simeq \bigoplus_{p \leq 1} H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p-1)) \\
 H^3(X^*) &= (gr_4^w H^3(X^*) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \geq 3} gr_{2p}^w H_Y^4(X)) \simeq \bigoplus_{p \geq 2} H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p-1)).
 \end{aligned}$$

When  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$  similar results hold by taking  $\bar{F}_\infty$ -invariants on both sides.

*Proof.* 1 follows from Corollary 2.13. The first statement in 2 is a consequence of  $\dim X/\kappa = 1$ . For  $q \in [0, 3]$ , the description of the graded groups  $H^q(X^*)$  follows from Proposition 2.10, Proposition 2.19, Proposition 2.21. For  $p, q \geq 2$ , the isomorphisms  $H_{\mathcal{D}}^q(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p)) \simeq H^{q-1}(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(p-1))$  are a consequence of Remark 2.20, whereas the isomorphisms  $gr_2^w H^1(X^*) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(1)) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}) \simeq H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R})$  and  $gr_2^w H^2(X^*) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(1)) \simeq H_{\mathcal{D}}^3(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(2)) \simeq H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{R}(1))$  follow from Proposition 2.21. In particular the last isomorphism holds because  $\dim X = 1$ . Finally, the case  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$  is a consequence of the fact that the  $\bar{F}_\infty$ -invariants of the homology of the complex (2.23) give  $H_{\mathcal{D}}^*(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p))$ .  $\square$

### 2.5. Archimedean Frobenius and regularized determinants

On the *infinite-dimensional* real vector space  $gr_{2p}^w H^*(\tilde{X}^*)$  (cf. (2.9)) one defines a linear operator

$$\Phi : gr_{2p}^w H^*(\tilde{X}^*) \rightarrow gr_{2p}^w H^*(\tilde{X}^*), \quad \Phi(x) = p \cdot x \tag{2.28}$$

and then extend this definition to the whole group  $H^*(\tilde{X}^*)$  according to the decomposition  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*) = \bigoplus_p gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$ .

In this section we will consider the operator  $\Phi$  restricted to the subspace  $H^*(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ . Following the description of this space given in Proposition 2.23, we write  $\Phi = \bigoplus_{q=0}^2 \Phi_q$ , where

$$\Phi_q : H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \rightarrow H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}.$$

Given a self-adjoint operator  $T$  with pure point spectrum, the *zeta-regularized determinant* is defined by

$$\det_\infty(s - T) = \exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_T(s, z)|_{z=0}\right), \tag{2.29}$$

where

$$\zeta_T(s, z) = \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(T)} m_\lambda (s - \lambda)^{-z}. \tag{2.30}$$

Here,  $\text{Spec}(T)$  denotes the spectrum of  $T$  and  $m_\lambda = \dim E_\lambda(T)$  is the multiplicity of the eigenvalue  $\lambda$  with eigenspace  $E_\lambda(T)$ .

$\Phi_q$  is a self-adjoint operator with respect to the inner product induced by (2.8), with spectrum

$$\text{Spec}(\Phi_q) = \begin{cases} \{n \in \mathbb{Z}, n \leq 0\} & q = 0, 1 \\ \{n \in \mathbb{Z}, n \leq 1\} & q = 2. \end{cases}$$

The eigenspaces  $E_n(\Phi_q) = gr_{2n}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  have dimensions  $\dim E_n(\Phi_q) = b_q$ , the  $q$ -th Betti number of  $X/\mathbb{C}$ .

**Proposition 2.24.** *The zeta-regularized determinant of  $\Phi_q$  is given by*

$$\det_\infty\left(\frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\Phi_q}{2\pi}\right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^{-b_q}, \tag{2.31}$$

for  $q = 0, 1$  and

$$\det_\infty\left(\frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\Phi_2}{2\pi}\right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s - 1)^{-b_2}, \tag{2.32}$$

with  $\Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)$  and  $\Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)$  as in (2.21).

*Proof.* We write explicitly the zeta function for the operator  $\Phi_q/(2\pi)$ . When  $q = 0, 1$ , this has spectrum  $\{n/(2\pi)\}_{n \leq 0}$ , hence we have

$$\zeta_{\Phi_q/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z) = \sum_{n \leq 0} b_q (s/(2\pi) - n/(2\pi))^{-z} = b_q (2\pi)^z \zeta(s, z).$$

$\zeta(s, z)$  is the Hurwitz zeta function

$$\zeta(s, z) = \sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{1}{(s + n)^z}.$$

For  $q = 2$ , similarly we have

$$\zeta_{\Phi_2/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z) = b_2 (2\pi)^z (\zeta(s, z) + (s - 1)^{-z}).$$

It is well known that the Hurwitz zeta function satisfies the following properties:

$$\zeta(s, 0) = \frac{1}{2} - s, \quad \frac{d}{dz} \zeta(s, z)|_{z=0} = \log \Gamma(s) - \frac{1}{2} \log(2\pi). \tag{2.33}$$

When  $q = 0, 1$ , the computation of  $\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_q/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0}$  yields

$$\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_q/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z) = b_q \left( \log(2\pi)(2\pi)^z \zeta(s, z) + (2\pi)^z \frac{d}{dz} \zeta(s, z) \right).$$

At  $z = 0$ , this gives

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_q/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0} &= b_q \left( \log(2\pi)\zeta(s, 0) + \frac{d}{dz}\zeta(s, z)|_{z=0} \right) \\ &= b_q \left( \log(2\pi)\left(\frac{1}{2} - s\right) + \log \Gamma(s) - \frac{1}{2} \log(2\pi) \right) \\ &= b_q(-s \log(2\pi) + \log \Gamma(s)). \end{aligned}$$

Taking the exponential we get

$$\begin{aligned} \exp \left( -\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_q/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0} \right) &= \exp(-b_q(-s \log(2\pi) + \log \Gamma(s))) = \\ &= ((2\pi)^{-s} \Gamma(s))^{-b_q} = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^{-b_q}. \end{aligned}$$

When  $q = 2$ , one has similarly

$$\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_2/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z) = b_2 \left( (\log(2\pi)(2\pi)^z \zeta(s, z) + (2\pi)^z \frac{d}{dz} \zeta(s, z)) + b_2 \frac{d}{dz} \frac{(2\pi)^z}{(s-1)^z} \right).$$

At  $z = 0$  this gives

$$b_2(-s \log(2\pi) + \log \Gamma(s) + \log(2\pi) - \log(s-1)).$$

Thus, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \exp \left( -\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_2/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0} \right) &= \left( (2\pi)^{-s+1} \frac{\Gamma(s)}{(s-1)} \right)^{-b_2} \\ &= \left( (2\pi)^{-(s-1)} \Gamma(s-1) \right)^{-b_2} = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s-1)^{-b_2}. \quad \square \end{aligned}$$

**Remark 2.25.** When  $X/\mathbb{C}$  is a smooth complex algebraic curve, that is, when  $X/\mathbb{C} = X_{\alpha(K)}$  for an archimedean prime that corresponds to a complex (non-real) embedding  $\alpha : K \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ , the description of the complex Euler factor is given by (2.20), as

$$L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^q(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s) = \begin{cases} \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^{b_q} & q = 0, 1 \\ \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s-1)^{b_2} & q = 2, \end{cases}$$

where  $H^q(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$  is the Betti cohomology. The relation to the determinants (2.31) (2.32) is then

$$\det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\Phi_q}{2\pi} \right)^{-1} = L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^q(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s). \tag{2.34}$$

This result was proved in [15] §5, via comparison to Deninger’s pair  $(H_{ar}^*, \Theta)$ .

Assume now that  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  is a smooth real algebraic curve; that is  $X_{/\mathbb{R}} = X_{\alpha(K)}$  for an archimedean prime that corresponds to a real embedding  $\alpha : K \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}$ . In this case  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  is a symmetric Riemann surface, namely a compact Riemann surface with an involution  $\iota : X_{/\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  induced by complex conjugation. Such involution on the manifold induces an action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ : we refer to Remark 2.17 for the description of this operator.

For instance, following the decomposition given in Proposition 2.23,

$$H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^1(X^*)$$

splits as the sum of two eigenspaces for  $\bar{F}_\infty$  with eigenvalues  $\pm 1$ :

$$H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = E^+ \oplus E^-,$$

where

$$E^+ := H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0, \bar{F}_\infty=id} = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} E_1(2p) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \leq -1} E_{-1}(2p+1), \tag{2.35}$$

$$E^- := H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0, \bar{F}_\infty=-id} = \bigoplus_{p \leq -1} E_1(2p+1) \oplus \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} E_{-1}(2p).$$

We consider once more the operator  $\Phi$  acting on  $H^*(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ , and we denote by  $\hat{\Phi}_q$  the restriction of this operator to the subspace  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0, \bar{F}_\infty=id}$ .

**Proposition 2.26.** *The regularized determinant for the operator*

$$\hat{\Phi}_q = \Phi|_{H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0, \bar{F}_\infty=id}}$$

is given by ( $g = \text{genus of } X_{/\kappa}$ )

$$\det_\infty \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_0}{2\pi} \right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)^{-b_0} \tag{2.36}$$

$$\det_\infty \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} \right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)^{-b_1/2} \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s+1)^{-b_1/2} = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^{-g} \tag{2.37}$$

$$\det_\infty \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_2}{2\pi} \right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s-1)^{-b_2}. \tag{2.38}$$

*Proof.* We write explicitly the zeta function for the operators  $\hat{\Phi}_q$  on  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0, \bar{F}_\infty=id}$ . The spectrum of  $\hat{\Phi}_q$  is given by  $\{n \in \mathbb{Z}, n \leq 0\}$  for  $q = 0, 1$  and  $\{n \in \mathbb{Z}, n \leq 1\}$  for  $q = 2$ . Because complex conjugation is the identity on  $H^0(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}(2n))$ , the eigenspaces where  $\bar{F}_\infty$  acts as identity are  $E_n(\hat{\Phi}_0) = gr_{4n}^w H^0(X^*)$ . On the other hand,  $\bar{F}_\infty$  acts as the identity on  $H^2(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}(2n+1))$ ,

hence  $E_n(\hat{\Phi}_2) = g^w_{2(2n+1)} H^2(X^*)$ . The action of  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on  $H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(n))$  is the identity precisely on the eigenspaces  $E_n(\hat{\Phi}_1) = E_1(2n) \oplus E_{-1}(2n+1)$  as in (2.35).

The zeta function of  $\hat{\Phi}_0/(2\pi)$  is therefore of the form

$$\zeta_{\hat{\Phi}_0/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z) = \sum_{n \geq 0} b_0 \left( \frac{s+2n}{2\pi} \right)^{-z} = b_0(2\pi)^z \sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{1}{(s+2n)^z} = b_0(\pi)^z \zeta(s/2, z),$$

where  $\zeta(s, z)$  is the Hurwitz zeta function. Using the identities (2.33), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\hat{\Phi}_0/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0} &= b_0(\log(\pi)(1/2 - s/2) + \log \Gamma(s/2) - 1/2 \log(2\pi)) \\ &= b_0(-s/2 \log(\pi) - 1/2 \log(2) + \log \Gamma(s/2)). \end{aligned}$$

Hence, using the equalities (2.21), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\hat{\Phi}_0/(2\pi)}(s/(2\pi), z)|_{z=0}\right) &= \exp(-b_0(-s/2 \log(\pi) - 1/2 \log(2) + \log \Gamma(s/2))) \\ &= \left(2^{-1/2} \pi^{-s/2} \Gamma(s/2)\right)^{-b_0} = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)^{-b_0}. \end{aligned}$$

The determinant for  $\hat{\Phi}_1/(2\pi)$  is given by the product

$$\det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} \right) = \det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_1(2n)} \right) \cdot \det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_{-1}(2n+1)} \right).$$

The zeta function for the first operator is given by

$$\zeta_{\frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_1(2n)}}(s/(2\pi), z) = \frac{b_1}{2} \pi^z \zeta(s/2, z)$$

while the zeta function for the second operator is

$$\zeta_{\frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_{-1}(2n+1)}}(s/(2\pi), z) = \frac{b_1}{2} (2\pi)^z \sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{1}{(s+1+2n)^z} = \frac{b_1}{2} \pi^z \zeta((s+1)/2, z).$$

Thus, we obtain

$$\det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_1(2n)} \right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)^{-b_1/2}$$

and

$$\det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_1}{2\pi} |_{\oplus_n E_{-1}(2n+1)} \right) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s+1)^{-b_1/2}.$$

Then, (2.37) follows using the equality  $\Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s)\Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s+1) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)$ .

Finally, for  $\hat{\Phi}_2/(2\pi)$ , we have

$$\zeta_{\frac{\hat{\Phi}_2}{2\pi}} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi}, z \right) = b_2(2\pi)^z \sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{1}{(s-1+2n)^z} = b_2 \pi^z \zeta((s-1)/2, z),$$

hence

$$\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\frac{\hat{\Phi}_2}{2\pi}} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi}, z \right) \Big|_{z=0} = b_2 \left( -(s-1)/2 \log \pi - 1/2 \log 2 + \log \Gamma((s-1)/2) \right).$$

Therefore

$$\det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\hat{\Phi}_2}{2\pi} \right) = \left( 2^{-1/2} \pi^{-(s-1)/2} \Gamma((s-1)/2) \right)^{-b_2} = \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s-1)^{-1}. \quad \square$$

**Remark 2.27.** When  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  is a smooth, real algebraic curve of genus  $g$ , that is, when  $X_{/\mathbb{R}} = X_{\alpha(K)}$  for an archimedean prime that corresponds to a real embedding  $\alpha : K \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}$ , the description of the real Euler factor is given by (2.20), as

$$L_{\mathbb{R}}(H^q(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}), s) = \begin{cases} \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s) & q = 0 \\ \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^g & q = 1 \\ \Gamma_{\mathbb{R}}(s-1) & q = 2. \end{cases}$$

As for the complex case, this result was proved in [15]: §5, via comparison to Deninger’s pair  $(H_{ar}^*, \Theta)$ .

### 3. Arithmetic spectral triple

In this section we show that the polarized Lefschetz module structure of Theorem 2.6 together with the operator  $\Phi$  define a “cohomological” version of the structure of a *spectral triple* in the sense of Connes ([12] §VI).

In this section, we will use *real coefficients*. In fact, in order to introduce spectral data compatible with the arithmetic construction of Section 2, we need to preserve the structure of real vector spaces. For this reason, the algebras we consider in this construction will be real group rings.

Let  $(H(X^*), \Phi)$  be the cohomological theory of the fiber at the archimedean prime introduced in Section 2, endowed with the structure of polarized Lefschetz module.

In Theorem 3.3 we show that the Lefschetz representation of  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  given by the Lefschetz module structure on  $K$  induces a representation

$$\rho : SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(H(\tilde{X}^*)), \tag{3.1}$$

where  $\mathcal{B}(H(\tilde{X}^*))$  is the algebra of bounded operators on a real Hilbert space completion of  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$  (in the inner product determined by the polarization of  $K$ ). The representation  $\rho$  extends to the real group ring compatibly with the Lefschetz module structure on  $H(\tilde{X}^*) = \mathbb{H}(K, d)$ . We work with the group ring, since for the purpose of this paper we are interested in considering the restriction

of (3.1) to certain discrete subgroups of  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ . A formulation in terms of the Lie algebra and its universal enveloping algebra will be considered elsewhere.

The main result of this section is Theorem 3.7, where we prove that the inner product on  $H^*(\tilde{X}^*)$  and the representation (3.1) induce an inner product on  $H^*(X^*) = \mathbb{H}(\mathrm{Cone}(N))$  and a corresponding representation  $\rho_N$  in  $\mathcal{B}(H^*(X^*))$ . We then consider the spectral data  $(A, H^*(X^*), \Phi)$ , where  $A$  is the image under  $\rho_N$  of the real group ring, and show that the operator  $\Phi$  satisfies the properties of a Dirac operator (in the sense of Connes' theory of spectral triples), which has bounded commutators with the elements of  $A$ .

In noncommutative geometry, the notion of a spectral triple provides the correct generalization of the classical structure of a Riemannian manifold. The two notions agree on a commutative space. In the usual context of Riemannian geometry, the definition of the infinitesimal element  $ds$  on a smooth spin manifold can be expressed in terms of the inverse of the classical Dirac operator  $D$ . This is the key remark that motivates the theory of spectral triples. In particular, the geodesic distance between two points on the manifold is defined in terms of  $D^{-1}$  ([12] §VI). The spectral triple that describes a classical Riemannian spin manifold is  $(A, H, D)$ , where  $A$  is the algebra of complex valued smooth functions on the manifold,  $H$  is the Hilbert space of square integrable spinor sections, and  $D$  is the classical Dirac operator (a square root of the Laplacian). These data determine completely and uniquely the Riemannian geometry on the manifold. It turns out that, when expressed in this form, the notion of spectral triple extends to more general noncommutative spaces, where the data  $(A, H, D)$  consist of a  $C^*$ -algebra  $A$  (or more generally of a smooth subalgebra of a  $C^*$ -algebra) with a representation as bounded operators on a Hilbert space  $H$ , and an operator  $D$  on  $H$  that verifies the main properties of a Dirac operator. The notion of smoothness is determined by  $D$ : the smooth elements of  $A$  are defined by the intersection of domains of powers of the derivation given by commutator with  $|D|$ .

The basic geometric structure encoded by the theory of spectral triples is Riemannian geometry, but in more refined cases, such as Kähler geometry, the additional structure can be easily encoded as additional symmetries. In our case, for instance, the algebra  $A$  corresponds to the action of the Lefschetz operator, hence it carries the information (at the cohomological level) on the Kähler form.

In the theory of spectral triples, in general, the Hilbert space  $H$  is a space of *cochains* on which the natural algebra of the geometry is acting. Here we are considering a simplified triple of spectral data defined on the *cohomology*, hence we do not expect the full algebra describing the geometry at arithmetic infinity to act. We show in Theorem 3.19 that the spectral data  $(A, H^*(X^*), \Phi)$  are sufficient to recover the alternating product of the local factor. In fact, the theory of spectral triples encodes important arithmetic information on the underlying noncommutative space, expressed via an associated family of *zeta functions*. By studying the

zeta functions attached to the data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$ , we find a natural one whose associated Ray–Singer determinant is the alternating product of the  $\Gamma$ -factors for the real Hodge structure over  $\mathbb{C}$  given by the Betti cohomology  $H^q(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C})$ . A more refined construction of a spectral triple associated to the archimedean places of an arithmetic surface (using the full complex  $K$  instead of its cohomology) will be considered elsewhere.

Moreover, we show that in the case of a Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{C}$  of genus  $g \geq 2$ , one can enrich the cohomological spectral data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$  with the additional datum of a Schottky uniformization. Given the group  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ , which gives a Schottky uniformization of the Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{C}$  and of the hyperbolic handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma \cup X/\mathbb{C} = \Gamma \backslash (\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_\Gamma)$ , Bers simultaneous uniformization ([5] [7]) determines a pair of Fuchsian Schottky groups  $G_1, G_2 \subset \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ , which correspond geometrically to a decomposition of the Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{C}$  as the union of two Riemann surfaces with boundary. We let the Fuchsian Schottky groups act on the complex  $K$  and on the cohomology via the restriction of the representation of  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  of the Lefschetz module structure to a normal subgroup  $\tilde{\Gamma} \subset \Gamma$  determined by the simultaneous uniformization, with  $G_1 \simeq \tilde{\Gamma} \simeq G_2$ . Geometrically, this group corresponds to the choice of a covering  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}} \rightarrow \mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  of  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  by a handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$ . The image  $A(\tilde{\Gamma})$  of the group ring of  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  under the representation  $\rho_N$  encodes the information on the topology of  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$  in the spectral data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$ .

In the interpretation of the tangle of bounded geodesics in the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$  as the dual graph of the closed fiber at arithmetic infinity, the covering  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}} \rightarrow \mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  produces a corresponding covering of the dual graph by geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$ . Passing to the covering  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$  may be regarded as an analog at the archimedean primes of the refinement of the dual graph of a Mumford curve that corresponds to a minimal resolution (*cf.* [33] §3).

When the archimedean prime corresponds to a real embedding  $K \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}$  so that the corresponding Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{R}$  acquires a real structure, Proposition 3.15 shows that if  $X/\mathbb{R}$  is a smooth orthosymmetric real algebraic curve (in particular, the set of real points  $X/\mathbb{R}(\mathbb{R})$  is nonempty), then there is a preferred choice of a Fuchsian Schottky group  $\Gamma$  determined by the real structure for which the simultaneous uniformization consists of cutting the Riemann surface along  $X/\mathbb{R}(\mathbb{R})$ .

### 3.1. Spectral triples

We recall the basic setting of Connes theory of spectral triples. For a more complete treatment we refer to [13], [12], [14].

**Definition 3.1.** A spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  consists of an involutive algebra  $\mathcal{A}$  with a representation

$$\rho : \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$$

as bounded operators on a Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}$ , and an operator  $D$  (called the Dirac operator) on  $\mathcal{H}$ , which satisfies the following properties:

1.  $D$  is self-adjoint.
2. For all  $\lambda \notin \mathbb{R}$ , the resolvent  $(D - \lambda)^{-1}$  is a compact operator on  $\mathcal{H}$ .
3. For all  $a \in \mathcal{A}$ , the commutator  $[D, a]$  is a bounded operator on  $\mathcal{H}$ .

**Remark 3.2.** Property 2 of Definition 3.1 generalizes ellipticity of the standard Dirac operator on a compact manifold. Usually, the involutive algebra  $\mathcal{A}$  satisfying Property 3 can be chosen to be a dense subalgebra of a  $C^*$ -algebra. This is the case, for instance, when we consider smooth functions on a manifold as a subalgebra of the commutative  $C^*$ -algebra of continuous functions. In the classical case of Riemannian manifolds, Property 3 is equivalent to the Lipschitz condition, hence it is satisfied by a larger class than that of smooth functions. In 3 we write  $[D, a]$  as shorthand for the extension to all of  $\mathcal{H}$  of the operator  $[D, \rho(a)]$  defined on the domain  $\text{Dom}(D) \cap \rho(a)^{-1}(\text{Dom}(D))$ , where  $\text{Dom}(D)$  is the domain of the unbounded operator  $D$ .

We review those aspects of the theory of spectral triples which are of direct interest to us. For a more general treatment we refer to [13], [12], [14].

**Volume form.** A spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  is said to be of dimension  $n$ , or *n-summable* if the operator  $|D|^{-n}$  is an infinitesimal of order one, which means that the eigenvalues  $\lambda_k(|D|^{-n})$  satisfy the estimate  $\lambda_k(|D|^{-n}) = O(k^{-1})$ .

For a positive compact operator  $T$  such that

$$\sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \lambda_j(T) = O(\log k),$$

the Dixmier trace  $\text{Tr}_\omega(T)$  is the coefficient of this logarithmic divergence, namely

$$\text{Tr}_\omega(T) = \lim_\omega \frac{1}{\log k} \sum_{j=1}^k \lambda_j(T). \quad (3.2)$$

Here the notation  $\lim_\omega$  takes into account the fact that the sequence

$$S(k, T) := \frac{1}{\log k} \sum_{j=1}^k \lambda_j(T)$$

is bounded though possibly nonconvergent. For this reason, the usual notion of limit is replaced by a choice of a linear form  $\lim_\omega$  on the set of bounded sequences satisfying suitable conditions that extend analogous properties of the limit. When the sequence  $S(k, T)$  converges (3.2) is just the ordinary limit  $\text{Tr}_\omega(T) = \lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} S(k, T)$ . So defined, the Dixmier trace (3.2) extends to any compact operator that is an infinitesimal of order one, since any such operator is a combination  $T = T_1 - T_2 + i(T_3 - T_4)$  of positive  $T_i$ . The operators for which the Dixmier

trace does not depend on the choice of the linear form  $\lim_\omega$  are called *measurable operators*.

On a noncommutative space the operator  $|D|^{-n}$  generalizes the notion of a volume form. The volume is defined as

$$V = \text{Tr}_\omega(|D|^{-n}). \tag{3.3}$$

More generally, consider the algebra  $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$  generated by  $\mathcal{A}$  and  $[D, \mathcal{A}]$ . Then, for  $a \in \tilde{\mathcal{A}}$ , integration with respect to the volume form  $|D|^{-n}$  is defined as

$$\int a := \frac{1}{V} \text{Tr}_\omega(a|D|^{-n}). \tag{3.4}$$

The usual notion of integration on a Riemannian spin manifold  $M$  can be recovered in this context ([12]) through the formula ( $n$  even):

$$\int_M f dv = \left(2^{n-[n/2]-1} \pi^{n/2} n \Gamma(n/2)\right) \text{Tr}_\omega(f|D|^{-n}).$$

Here  $D$  is the classical Dirac operator on  $M$  associated to the metric that determines the volume form  $dv$ , and  $f$  on the right-hand side is regarded as the multiplication operator acting on the Hilbert space of square integrable spinors on  $M$ .

**Zeta functions.** An important function associated to the Dirac operator  $D$  of a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  is its zeta function

$$\zeta_D(z) := \text{Tr}(|D|^{-z}) = \sum_\lambda \text{Tr}(\Pi(\lambda, |D|)) \lambda^{-z}, \tag{3.5}$$

where  $\Pi(\lambda, |D|)$  denotes the orthogonal projection on the eigenspace  $E(\lambda, |D|)$ .

An important result in the theory of spectral triples ([12] §IV Proposition 4) relates the volume (3.3) with the residue of the zeta function (3.5) at  $s = 1$  through the formula

$$V = \lim_{s \rightarrow 1^+} (s - 1) \zeta_D(s) = \text{Res}_{s=1} \text{Tr}(|D|^{-s}). \tag{3.6}$$

There is a family of zeta functions associated to a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$ , to which (3.5) belongs. For an operator  $a \in \tilde{\mathcal{A}}$ , we can define the zeta functions

$$\zeta_{a,D}(z) := \text{Tr}(a|D|^{-z}) = \sum_\lambda \text{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, |D|)) \lambda^{-z} \tag{3.7}$$

and

$$\zeta_{a,D}(s, z) := \sum_\lambda \text{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, |D|)) (s - \lambda)^{-z}. \tag{3.8}$$

These zeta functions are related to the heat kernel  $e^{-t|D|}$  by the Mellin transform

$$\zeta_{a,D}(z) = \frac{1}{\Gamma(z)} \int_0^\infty t^{z-1} \text{Tr}(a e^{-t|D|}) dt \tag{3.9}$$

where

$$\mathrm{Tr}(a e^{-t|D|}) = \sum_{\lambda} \mathrm{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, |D|)) e^{-t\lambda} =: \theta_{a,D}(t). \tag{3.10}$$

Similarly,

$$\zeta_{a,D}(s, z) = \frac{1}{\Gamma(z)} \int_0^\infty \theta_{a,D,s}(t) t^{z-1} dt \tag{3.11}$$

with

$$\theta_{a,D,s}(t) := \sum_{\lambda} \mathrm{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, |D|)) e^{(s-\lambda)t}. \tag{3.12}$$

Under suitable hypotheses on the asymptotic expansion of (3.12) (Theorem 2.7-2.8 of [25] §2), the functions (3.7) and (3.8) admit a unique analytic continuation ([14]) and there is an associated regularized determinant in the sense of Ray–Singer ([39]):

$$\det_{\infty a,D}(s) := \exp \left( -\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{a,D}(s, z) \Big|_{z=0} \right). \tag{3.13}$$

The family of zeta functions (3.7) also provides a refined notion of dimension for a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$ , called the *dimension spectrum*. This is a subset  $\Sigma = \Sigma(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  in  $\mathbb{C}$  with the property that all the zeta functions (3.7), as  $a$  varies in  $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$ , extend holomorphically to  $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Sigma$ .

### 3.2. Lefschetz modules and cohomological spectral data

We consider the polarized bigraded Lefschetz module  $(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, N, \ell, \psi)$  associated to the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  at an archimedean prime, as described in Section 2.

We set

$$\tilde{\Phi} : K^{i,j,k} \rightarrow K^{i,j,k} \quad \tilde{\Phi}(x) = \frac{(1+j-i)}{2} x. \tag{3.14}$$

The operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$  induces the operator  $\Phi$  of (2.28) on the cohomology  $H^{\cdot}(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ .

We have the following result.

**Theorem 3.3.** *Let  $(K^{\cdot,\cdot}, d, N, \ell, \psi)$  be the polarized bigraded Lefschetz module associated to a Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . Then the following holds.*

1. *The group  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  acts, via the representation  $\sigma_2$  of Lemma 3.13, by bounded operators on the Hilbert completion of  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$  in the inner product defined by the polarization  $\psi$ . This defines a representation*

$$\rho : \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(K, d)). \tag{3.15}$$

2. *Let  $\mathbb{A}$  be the image of the group ring in  $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(K, d))$ , obtained by extending (3.15). Then the operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$  defined in (3.14) has bounded commutators with all the elements in  $\mathbb{A}$ .*

*Proof.* 1. The representations  $\sigma_1$  and  $\sigma_2$  of Lemma 3.13 extend by linearity to representations  $\sigma_i$  of the real group ring in  $\text{Aut}(K)$ . By Theorem 2.6 and Corollary 2.7, the cohomology  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$  has an induced Lefschetz module structure. Thus we obtain induced actions of the real group ring on  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$ . We complete  $H(\tilde{X}^*) = \mathbb{H}(K, d)$  to a real Hilbert space with respect to the inner product induced by the polarization  $\psi$ . Consider operators of the form (2.5) with  $b = 1$ ,

$$U_a(x) := \sigma \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right\} (x) = a^i x \quad \text{for } x \in K^{i,j}.$$

A direct calculation shows that the  $U_a$  are in general *unbounded operators*: since the index  $i$  varies over a countable set, it is not hard to construct examples of infinite sums  $x = \sum_i x_i$  that are in the Hilbert space completion of  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$  but such that  $U_a(x)$  is no longer contained in this space.

On the other hand, the index  $j$  in the complex  $K^{i,j}$  varies, subject to the constraint  $j + 1 = q$ , where  $q$  is the degree of the differential forms (Remark 2.1). Thus, expressions of the form

$$\sigma \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} b & 0 \\ 0 & b^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \right\} (x) = b^j x \quad \text{for } x \in K^{i,j} \tag{3.16}$$

give rise to *bounded operators*. Thus, the representation  $\sigma_2$  of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  determines an action of the real group ring by bounded operators in  $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(K, d))$ .

2. It is sufficient to compute explicitly the following commutators with the operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$ . Elements of the form (2.5) commute with  $\tilde{\Phi}$ . Moreover, we have

$$\begin{aligned} [N, \tilde{\Phi}](x) &= \frac{1}{(2\pi\sqrt{-1})} \left( \frac{(1+j-i)}{2} - \frac{(1+j-i+2)}{2} \right) x = -N(x), \\ [\sigma_1(w_1), \tilde{\Phi}](x) &= \left( \frac{(1+j-i)}{2} - \frac{(1+j+i)}{2} \right) \sigma_1(w_1)(x) = -i\sigma_1(w_1)(x), \\ [\ell, \tilde{\Phi}](x) &= \left( \frac{(1+j-i)}{2} - \frac{(1+j+2-i)}{2} \right) (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-1} x \wedge \omega = -\ell(x) \end{aligned}$$

and

$$[\sigma_2(w_2), \tilde{\Phi}](x) = \left( \frac{(1+j-i)}{2} - \frac{(1-j-i)}{2} \right) \sigma_2(w)(x) = j\sigma_2(w)(x).$$

In particular, it follows that all the commutators that arise from the right representation are bounded operators (Remark 2.1). □

The Lefschetz representation  $\sigma_2$  of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  on the odd cohomology descends to a representation of  $\text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ , as follows.

**Corollary 3.4.** *The element  $\sigma_2(-id) \in A$  acts trivially on the odd cohomology  $\mathbb{H}^{2q+1}(K, d)$ .*

*Proof.* For  $x \in K^{i,j}$  we have

$$\sigma \left\{ 1, \begin{pmatrix} -1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \right\} (x) = (-1)^j x.$$

Since  $j + 1 = q$ , where  $q$  is the degree of the differential forms, we obtain that the induced action is trivial on odd cohomology.  $\square$

**Remark 3.5.** The operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$  in the data  $(A, \mathbb{H}(K, d), \tilde{\Phi})$  of Theorem 3.3 does not yet satisfy all the properties of a Dirac operator. In fact, the eigenspaces of  $\tilde{\Phi}$ , which coincide with the graded pieces  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$  of the cohomology, are not finite dimensional as the condition on the resolvent in Definition 3.1 implies. Therefore, it is necessary to restrict the structure  $(A, \mathbb{H}(K, d), \tilde{\Phi})$  to a suitable subspace of  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$ , which still carries all the arithmetic information.

**Definition 3.6.** The operator  $\Phi$  on  $\mathbb{H}(\text{Cone}(N)) = H(X^*)$  is obtained by extending the action on its graded pieces

$$\Phi|_{gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)} := \begin{cases} p & q \geq 2p \\ p - 1 & q \leq 2p - 1 \end{cases} \tag{3.17}$$

according to the decomposition  $H^q(X^*) = \bigoplus_{p \in \mathbb{Z}} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$ .

Notice that this definition is compatible with the operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$  defined in (3.14), acting on the complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  and with the induced operator  $\Phi$  on  $\mathbb{H}(K, d) = H(\tilde{X}^*)$ . In fact, from the Wang exact sequence (2.13) and Corollary 2.13 we know that, for  $q \geq 2p - 1$ ,  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  is identified with a subspace of  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$ , hence the restriction of the operator  $\Phi$  on  $H(\tilde{X}^*)$  acts on  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  as multiplication by  $p$ . In the case when  $q \leq 2(p - 1)$ , again using the exact sequence (2.13) (Corollary 2.13 and (2.16)), we can define  $\Phi$  of an element in  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  as  $\Phi$  of a preimage in  $gr_{2(p-1)}^w H^{q-1}(\tilde{X}^*)$ , hence as multiplication by  $p - 1$ . This is obviously well defined, hence the definition (3.17) is compatible with the exact sequences and the duality isomorphisms. Moreover, the operator  $\Phi$  of (3.17) agrees with the operator (2.28) on the subspace  $H(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  of  $H(X^*)$ .

**Theorem 3.7.** *Consider a Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{C}$  and the hyper-cohomology  $H(X^*)$  of  $\text{Cone}(N)$ . The inner product (2.8) defined by the polarization  $\psi$  induces an inner product on  $H(X^*)$ . Moreover, the representation (3.15) of  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  induces an action of the real group ring by bounded operators on the real Hilbert space completion of  $H^q(X^*)$ . For  $A$  the image under  $\rho$  of the group ring, consider the data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$ , with  $\Phi$  as in (3.17). The operator  $\Phi$  satisfies the properties of a 1-summable Dirac operator, with bounded commutators with the elements of  $A$ .*

*Proof.* The Wang exact sequence (2.13) and Corollary 2.13 imply that the hyper-cohomology  $H(X^*)$  of  $\text{Cone}(N)$  injects or is mapped upon surjectively by the

hyper-cohomology  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$  of the complex, in a way that is compatible with the grading. Thus, we obtain an induced inner product and Hilbert space completion on  $H(X^*)$ . Consider  $\text{Ker}(N) \subset gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$ . By Corollary 2.13, we know that this is nontrivial only if  $q \geq 2p$ , and in that case it is given by  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$ . Thus, we can show that there is an induced representation on  $\oplus_{2p \leq q} gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  by showing that the representation of  $A(\tilde{\Gamma})$  on  $H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$  preserves  $\text{Ker}(N)$ .

In the definition of the complex  $K^{i,j,k}$  in (2.1), the indices  $i, j, k$  and the integers  $p, q$  are related by  $2p = j + 1 - i$  and  $q = j + 1$ . Thus, the condition  $q \geq 2p$  corresponds to  $i \geq 0$ . The representation  $\sigma_2$  of  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  on  $K^{i,j}$  preserves the subspace with  $i \geq 0$ . Similarly, by construction, the representation  $\sigma_2$  preserves the subspaces  $\oplus_j K^{i,j,k}$  of  $\oplus_{j,k \geq i \geq 0} K^{i,j,k}$ . This implies that the induced representation  $\sigma_2$  on  $\mathbb{H}(K, d)$  preserves the summands of  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(\tilde{X}^*)$  as in Remark 2.14, and in particular it preserves  $\text{Ker}(N)$ . Thus we obtain a representation  $\rho_{\text{Ker}(N)}$  mapping the real group ring to  $A$  in  $\mathcal{B}(\text{Ker}(N))$ .

The duality isomorphisms  $N^{q-2p}$  of Proposition 2.15 determine duality isomorphisms between pieces of the hyper-cohomology  $H(X^*)$  of the cone:

$$\begin{aligned} \delta_0 : gr_{2p}^w H^0(X^*) &\xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2r}^w H^1(X^*), \quad p \leq 0, r = -p + 1 \geq 1 \\ \delta_1 : gr_{2p}^w H^1(X^*) &\xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2r}^w H^2(X^*), \quad p \leq 0, r = -p + 2 \geq 2 \\ \delta_2 : gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*) &\xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2r}^w H^3(X^*), \quad p \leq 1, r = -p + 3 \geq 2. \end{aligned} \tag{3.18}$$

We set  $\delta = \oplus_{q=0}^2 \delta_q$  and we obtain an action of  $A(\tilde{\Gamma})$  on  $H(X^*)$  by extending the representation  $\rho_{\text{Ker}(N)}$  by  $\delta \circ \rho_{\text{Ker}(N)} \circ \delta^{-1}$  on the part of  $H(X^*)$  dual to  $\text{Ker}(N)$ .

The operator  $\tilde{\Phi}$  of (3.14) induces the operator  $\Phi$  of (3.17) on  $\mathbb{H}(\text{Cone}(N)) = H(X^*)$ . This has the properties of a Dirac operator: the eigenspaces are all finite dimensional by the result of Proposition 2.22, and the commutators are bounded by Theorem 3.3. The spectrum of  $\Phi$  is given by  $\mathbb{Z}$  with constant multiplicities, so that  $\Phi^{-1}$  on the complement of the zero modes is an infinitesimal of order one.  $\square$

**Remark 3.8.** We make a few important comments about the data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$  of Theorem 3.7. Although for the purpose of our paper we only consider arithmetic surfaces, the results of Theorems 3.3 and 3.7 admit a generalization to higher dimensional arithmetic varieties. Moreover, notice that the data give a simplified cohomological version of a spectral triple encoding the full geometric data at arithmetic infinity, which should incorporate the spectral triple for the Hodge–Dirac operator on  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . In our setting, we restrict to forms harmonic with respect to the harmonic theory defined by  $\square$  on the complex  $K^{\cdot,\cdot}$  (Theorem 2.6 and Corollary 2.7) that are “square integrable” with respect to the inner product (2.8) given by the polarization. This, together with the action of the Lefschetz  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$ , is sufficient to recover the alternating product of the local factor (see Theorem 3.19). In a more refined construction of a spectral triple, which induces the data  $(A, H(X^*), \Phi)$  in

cohomology, the Hilbert space will consist of  $L^2$ -differential forms, possibly with additional geometric data, where a  $C^*$ -algebra representing the algebra of functions on a “geometric space at arithmetic infinity” will act.

### 3.3. Simultaneous uniformization

We begin by recalling the following elementary fact of hyperbolic geometry. Let  $\Gamma$  be a Kleinian group acting on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . Let  $\Omega \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  be a  $\Gamma$ -invariant domain. A subset  $\Omega_0 \subset \Omega$  is  $\Gamma$ -stable if, for every  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ , either  $\gamma(\Omega_0) = \Omega_0$  or  $\gamma(\Omega_0) \cap \Omega_0 = \emptyset$ . The  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of  $\Omega_0$  is the subgroup  $\Gamma_0$  of those  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  such that  $\gamma(\Omega_0) = \Omega_0$ . Let  $\pi_\Gamma$  denote the quotient map  $\pi_\Gamma : \Omega \rightarrow \Gamma \backslash \Omega$ .

**Claim 3.9** (Theorem 6.3.3 of [4]). Let  $\Omega_0 \subset \Omega$  be an open  $\Gamma$ -stable subdomain and let  $\Gamma_0$  be the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of  $\Omega_0$ . Then the quotient map  $\pi_\Gamma$  induces a conformal equivalence

$$\Gamma_0 \backslash \Omega_0 \simeq \pi_\Gamma(\Omega_0).$$

If  $\Gamma$  is a Kleinian group, a *quasi-circle* for  $\Gamma$  is a Jordan curve  $C$  in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  which is invariant under the action of  $\Gamma$ . In particular, such a curve contains the limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ .

In the case of Schottky groups, the following theorem shows that Bowen’s construction of a quasi-circle for  $\Gamma$  ([7]) determines a pair of Fuchsian Schottky groups  $G_1, G_2 \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  associated to  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ . The theorem describes the simultaneous uniformization by  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  of the two Riemann surfaces with boundary  $X_i = G_i \backslash \mathbb{H}^2$ , where  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  is the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of the connected components of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus C$ .

**Theorem 3.10.** *Let  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  be a Schottky group of rank  $g \geq 2$ . Then the following properties are satisfied:*

1. *There exists a quasi-circle  $C$  for  $\Gamma$ .*
2. *There is a collection of curves  $\hat{C}$  on the compact Riemann surface  $X_{/C} = \Gamma \backslash \Omega_\Gamma$  such that*

$$X_{/C} = X_1 \cup_{\partial X_1 = \hat{C} = \partial X_2} X_2,$$

*where  $X_i = G_i \backslash \mathbb{H}^2$  are Riemann surfaces with boundary, and the  $G_i \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  are Fuchsian Schottky groups. The  $G_i$  are isomorphic to  $\tilde{\Gamma} \subset \mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ , the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of the two connected components  $\Omega_i$  of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus C$ .*

*Proof.* 1. For the construction of a quasi-circle we proceed as in [7]. The choice of a set of generators  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^g$  for  $\Gamma$  determines  $2g$  Jordan curves  $\gamma_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, 2g$  in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  with pairwise disjoint interiors  $D_i$  such that, if we write  $g_{i+g} = g_i^{-1}$  for  $i = 1, \dots, g$ , the fractional linear transformation  $g_i$  maps the interior of  $\gamma_i$  to the

exterior of  $\gamma_{i+g \bmod 2g}$ . Now fix a choice of  $2g$  pairs of points  $\rho_i^\pm$  on the curves  $\gamma_i$  in such a way that  $g_i$  maps the two points  $\rho_i^\pm$  to the two points  $\rho_{i+g \bmod 2g}^\mp$ . Choose a collection  $C_0$  of pairwise disjoint oriented arcs in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  with the property that they do not intersect the interior of the disks  $D_i$ . Also assume that the oriented boundary of  $C_0$  as a 1-chain is given by  $\partial C_0 = \sum_i \rho_i^+ - \sum_i \rho_i^-$ . Then the curve

$$C := \Lambda_\Gamma \cup \bigcup_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \gamma C_0 \tag{3.19}$$

is a quasi-circle for  $\Gamma$ .

2. The image of the curves  $\gamma_i$  in the quotient  $X_{/\mathbb{C}} = \Gamma \backslash \Omega_\Gamma$  consists of  $g$  closed curves, whose homology classes  $a_i, i = 1, \dots, g$ , span the kernel  $\text{Ker}(I_*)$  of the map  $I_* : H_1(X_{/\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow H_1(\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma, \mathbb{Z})$  induced by the inclusion of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  as the boundary at infinity in the compactification of  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ . The image under the quotient map of the collection of points  $\{\gamma \rho_i^\pm\}_{\gamma \in \Gamma, i=1 \dots 2g}$  consists of two points on each curve  $a_i$ , and the image of  $C \cap \Omega_\Gamma$  consists of a collection  $\hat{C}$  of pairwise disjoint arcs on  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  connecting these  $2g$  points. By cutting the surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  along  $\hat{C}$  we obtain two surfaces  $X_i, i = 1, 2$ , with boundary  $\partial X_i = \hat{C}$ .

Since  $C$  is  $\Gamma$ -invariant, the two connected components  $\Omega_i, i = 1, 2$ , of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus C$  are  $\Gamma$ -stable. Let  $\Gamma_i$  denote the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of  $\Omega_i$ . Notice that  $\Gamma_1 = \Gamma_2$ . In fact, suppose there is  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  such that  $\gamma \in \Gamma_1$  and  $\gamma \notin \Gamma_2$ . Then  $\gamma(\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})) \subset \Omega_1 \cup C$  so that the image  $\gamma(\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}))$  is contractible in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . This would imply that  $\gamma$  has topological degree zero, but an orientation preserving fractional linear transformation has topological degree one.

We denote by  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer  $\tilde{\Gamma} = \Gamma_1 = \Gamma_2$ . Since the components  $\Omega_i$  are open subdomains of the  $\Gamma$ -invariant domain  $\Omega_\Gamma$ , Claim 3.9 implies that the quotients  $\tilde{\Gamma} \backslash \Omega_i$  are conformally equivalent to the image  $\pi_\Gamma(\Omega_i) \subset X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . By the explicit description of the surfaces with boundary  $X_i$ , it is easy to see that  $\pi_\Gamma(\Omega_i) = X_i$ .

The quasi-circle  $C$  is a Jordan curve in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , hence by the Riemann mapping theorem there exist conformal maps  $\alpha_i$  of the two connected components  $\Omega_i$  to the two hemispheres  $U_i$  of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$ ,

$$\alpha_i : \Omega_i \xrightarrow{\cong} U_i \quad U_1 \cup U_2 = \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}). \tag{3.20}$$

Consider the two groups

$$G_i := \{\alpha_i \gamma \alpha_i^{-1} : \gamma \in \tilde{\Gamma}\}.$$

These are isomorphic as groups to  $\tilde{\Gamma}$ ,  $G_i \simeq \tilde{\Gamma}$ . Moreover, the  $G_i$  preserve the upper/lower hemisphere  $U_i$ , hence they are Fuchsian groups,  $G_i \subset \text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ .

The conformal equivalence  $\tilde{\Gamma} \backslash \Omega_i \simeq X_i$  implies that the  $G_i$  provide the Fuchsian uniformization of  $X_i = G_i \backslash \mathbb{H}^2$ , where  $\mathbb{H}^2$  is identified with the upper/lower hemisphere  $U_i$  in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$ .

The group  $\tilde{\Gamma} \subset \Gamma$  is itself a discrete purely loxodromic subgroup of  $\text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  isomorphic to a free group, hence a Schottky group, so that the  $G_i$  are Fuchsian Schottky groups.  $\square$

Let  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  be an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve. In this case, we can apply the following refinement of the result of Theorem 3.10. We refer to [1], [45] for a proof.

**Proposition 3.11.** *Let  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  be a smooth real orthosymmetric algebraic curve of genus  $g \geq 2$ . Then the following holds.*

1.  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  has a Schottky uniformization such that the domain of discontinuity  $\Omega_\Gamma \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  is symmetric with respect to  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ .
2. The reflection about  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$  gives an involution on  $\Omega_\Gamma$  that induces the involution  $\iota : X_{/\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  of the real structure.
3. The circle  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  is a quasi-circle for the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ , such that the image in  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \cap \Omega_\Gamma$  is the fixed point set  $X_\iota$  of the involution.
4. The Schottky group  $\Gamma$  is a Fuchsian Schottky group.

The choice of a lifting  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  of the Schottky group determines corresponding lifts of  $\tilde{\Gamma} \subset \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  and  $G_i \subset \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ .

**Remark 3.12.** In [24], the condition  $\dim_H(\Lambda_\Gamma) < 1$  on the limit set was necessary in order to ensure convergence of the Poincaré series that gives the abelian differentials on  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ , hence in order to express the Green function on  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  in terms of geodesics in the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ . Notice that this condition is satisfied for an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$ , with the choice of Schottky uniformization described above, where the limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  is contained in the rectifiable circle  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$ .

The above results on simultaneous uniformization provide a way of implementing the datum of the Schottky uniformization into the cohomological spectral data of §3.2, by letting the pair  $G_1 \times G_2$  of Fuchsian Schottky groups in  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  act via the  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  representation of the Lefschetz module.

**Lemma 3.13.** *Let  $\sigma : \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \times \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \mathrm{Aut}(K)$  be the representation associated to the bigraded Lefschetz module structure on the complex  $K^\cdot$ . Let  $\Gamma \subset \mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  be a Schottky group that determines a Schottky uniformization of  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . Let  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  be the corresponding lift to  $\mathrm{SL}(2, \mathbb{C})$  of the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of the components  $\Omega_i$  in the complement of a quasi-circle  $C$ . Then  $(K^\cdot, N, \ell, \psi)$  carries a left and a right action of  $\tilde{\Gamma}$ ,*

$$\sigma_1(\gamma) := \sigma\{\alpha_1\gamma\alpha_1^{-1}, 1\} \tag{3.21}$$

$$\sigma_2(\gamma) := \sigma\{1, \alpha_2\gamma\alpha_2^{-1}\}, \tag{3.22}$$

where  $\alpha_i$  are the conformal maps (3.20) of  $\Omega_i$  to the two hemispheres in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$ .

*Proof.* By Theorem 3.10 we obtain Fuchsian Schottky groups  $G_i = \{\alpha_i \gamma \alpha_i^{-1}, \gamma \in \tilde{\Gamma}\}$  in  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$ . We consider the restriction of the representation  $\sigma : SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \times SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \text{Aut}(K)$  to  $G_1 \times \{1\}$  and  $\{1\} \times G_2$  as in (3.21) and (3.22).  $\square$

We can then adapt the result of Theorems 3.3 and 3.7 to the restriction of the representation (3.15) to the group ring  $\mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}]$ . We denote by  $A(\tilde{\Gamma}) \subset A$  the image of the group ring  $\mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}]$  under the representation  $\rho$ .

**Theorem 3.14.** *Let  $(K, d, N, \ell, \psi)$  be the polarized bigraded Lefschetz module associated to a Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$  of genus  $g \geq 2$ , and let  $\Gamma \subset SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  be a choice of Schottky uniformization for  $X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ . Let  $\tilde{\Gamma}$  be a lift to  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  of the  $\Gamma$ -stabilizer of the two connected components of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus C$  as in Theorem 3.10. Consider the representation*

$$\rho : \mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}] \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(K, d)) \tag{3.23}$$

*induced by (3.15), and the corresponding representation*

$$\rho : \mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}] \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\text{Ker}(N)).$$

*Then the results of Theorems 3.3 and 3.7 hold for the data  $(\mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}], H^*(X^*), \Phi)$ , with  $A(\tilde{\Gamma}) = \rho(\mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}])$  and  $\Phi$  as in (3.17).*

Heuristically, the algebra  $A(\Gamma)$  represents a noncommutative version of the hyperbolic handlebody. In fact, if  $\Gamma \subset PSL(2, \mathbb{C})$  is a Schottky group, the group ring of  $\Gamma$ , viewed as a noncommutative space, carries complete topological information on the handlebody, which is the classifying space of  $\Gamma$ .

If  $X$  is an arithmetic surface over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$ , where  $O_{\mathbb{K}}$  is the ring of integers of a number field  $\mathbb{K}$  with  $n = [\mathbb{K} : \mathbb{Q}]$ , the above result can be applied at each of the  $n$  archimedean primes, by choosing at each prime  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$  a Schottky uniformization of the corresponding Riemann surface  $X_{\alpha(\mathbb{K})}$ . At the primes that correspond to the  $r$  real embeddings,  $X_{\alpha(\mathbb{K})}$  has a real structure.

We have the following version of Theorem 3.14 for the case of a real algebraic curve.

**Proposition 3.15.** *Let  $X$  be an arithmetic surface over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$ , with the property that, at all the real archimedean primes, the Riemann surface  $X_{\alpha(\mathbb{K})}$  is an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve of genus  $g \geq 2$ . Let  $(K, d, N, \ell, \psi)$  be the polarized bigraded Lefschetz module associated to  $X_{/\mathbb{R}} = X_{\alpha(\mathbb{K})}$ . Then the representation  $\sigma_2$  extends to representations*

$$\begin{aligned} \rho : \mathbb{R}[\Gamma] &\rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(K, d)), \\ \rho_N : \mathbb{R}[\Gamma] &\rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{H}(\text{Cone}(N))) \end{aligned}$$

*with the properties as in Theorems 3.3 and 3.7, where  $\Gamma$  is the Fuchsian Schottky uniformization for  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  of Proposition 3.11.*

**Remark 3.16.** In this paper, the choice of dealing with the case of the Schottky group in Theorem 3.14 is motivated by the geometric setting proposed by Manin [24]. However, it is clear that the argument given in Theorem 3.3 holds in greater generality. This suggests that the picture of Arakelov geometry at the archimedean places may be further enriched by considering *tunnelling* phenomena between different archimedean places – something like higher order correlation functions – where, instead of filling each Riemann surface  $X_{\alpha(\mathbb{K})}$  by a handlebody, one can consider more general hyperbolic 3-manifolds with different boundary components at different archimedean primes. We leave the investigation of such phenomena to future work.

**3.4. Some zeta functions and determinants**

The duality isomorphisms  $N^{q-2p}$  of Proposition 2.15 and the induced isomorphisms  $\delta_q$  of (3.18) give some further structure to the spectral triple.

Define subspaces  $H^{\pm}(X^*)$  of  $H(X^*)$  in the following way:

$$\begin{aligned} H^-(X^*) &= \oplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^0(X^*) \oplus \oplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^1(X^*) \oplus \oplus_{p \leq 1} gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*), \\ H^+(X^*) &:= \oplus_{p \geq 1} gr_{2p}^w H^1(X^*) \oplus \oplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*) \oplus \oplus_{p \geq 2} gr_{2p}^w H^3(X^*). \end{aligned} \tag{3.24}$$

Let  $\delta = \oplus_{q=0}^2 \delta_q$  be the duality isomorphism of (3.18) and set

$$\omega = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \delta^{-1} \\ \delta & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

The map  $\omega$  interchanges the subspaces  $H^{\pm}(X^*)$ .

**Lemma 3.17.** *The map  $\omega$  has the following properties:*

- $\omega^2 = id, \omega^* = \omega.$
- $[\omega, a] = 0,$  for all  $a \in A.$
- $(\Phi\omega + \omega\Phi)|_{H^q(X^*)} = q \cdot id.$

*Proof.* By construction (Theorem 3.7) the action of  $A$  commutes with  $\omega$ . By (3.17), for  $q \geq 2p$  the operator  $\Phi$  on  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  acts as multiplication by  $p$ . The duality isomorphism, mapping  $gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)$  to  $gr_{2(q-p+1)}^w H^{q+1}(X^*)$  (Proposition 2.15), and  $\Phi$  acts on  $gr_{2(q-p+1)}^w H^{q+1}(X^*)$  as multiplication by  $(q - p)$ . Thus, we obtain

$$(\Phi\omega + \omega\Phi)|_{gr_{2p}^w H^q(X^*)}(x) = (q - p) \cdot x + p \cdot x = q \cdot x. \quad \square$$

**Remark 3.18.** Recall that a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  is called *even* if there is an operator  $\omega$  such that  $\omega^2 = id$  and  $\omega^* = \omega$ ; the commutator  $[\omega, a] = 0$ , for all  $a \in \mathcal{A}$  and the Dirac operator satisfies  $D\omega + \omega D = 0$ . The conditions of Lemma 3.17

provide a weaker version of this notion, depending on the degree of the cohomology  $H^q(X^*)$ .

Due to the presence of this further structure on the spectral triple, determined by the duality isomorphisms, in addition to the family of zeta functions (3.7), (3.8), we can consider zeta functions of the form

$$\zeta_{a, P_{\pm} \Phi}(s, z) := \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(P_{\pm} \Phi)} \text{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, P_{\pm} \Phi))(s - \lambda)^{-z}, \tag{3.25}$$

where  $P_{\pm}$  are the projections on  $H^{\pm}(X^*)$ . In this setting we can now recover the  $\Gamma$ -factors.

**Theorem 3.19.** *Consider  $a = \sigma_2(-id)$  as an element in  $\text{Aut}(K^{\cdot\cdot})$ , acting on  $H^{\cdot}(X^*)$  via the induced representation (cf. Theorem 3.7). Then the zeta function (3.25)*

$$\zeta_{a, P_- \Phi}(s, z) := \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(P_- \Phi)} \text{Tr}(a \Pi(\lambda, P_- \Phi))(s - \lambda)^{-z}$$

satisfies

$$\exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{a, P_- \Phi / (2\pi)}(s / (2\pi), z) \Big|_{z=0}\right)^{-1} = \frac{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)}{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s) \cdot L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)}. \tag{3.26}$$

*Proof.* Notice that we have  $P_- \Phi = \Phi|_{H^{\cdot}(\tilde{X}^*)_{N=0}}$ . Moreover, recall that the element  $a = \sigma_2(-id)$  acts as  $(-1)^{q-1}$  on differential forms of degree  $q$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} \exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{a, P_- \Phi / (2\pi)}(s / (2\pi), z) \Big|_{z=0}\right) &= \prod_{q=0}^2 \exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{a, P_- \frac{\Phi}{2\pi} |_{H^q(X^*)}}(s / (2\pi), z) \Big|_{z=0}\right) \\ &= \prod_{q=0}^2 \exp\left((-1)^q \frac{d}{dz} \zeta_{\Phi_q}(s / (2\pi), z) \Big|_{z=0}\right), \end{aligned}$$

where  $\Phi_q = \Phi|_{H^q(\tilde{X}^*)_{N=0}}$ . The result then follows by Proposition 2.24. □

We give a few more examples of computations with zeta functions related to the arithmetic spectral triple.

**Example 3.20.** *For  $\text{Re}(s) \gg 0$ , the zeta function (3.5) of the Dirac operator  $\Phi$  is given by*

$$\zeta_{\Phi}(s) = \text{Tr}(|\Phi|^{-s}) = (4g + 4)\zeta(s) + 1 + \frac{1}{2s}, \tag{3.27}$$



As an immediate consequence of this calculation we obtain the volume determined by the Dirac operator  $\Phi$ .

**Example 3.21.** *The volume in the metric determined by  $\Phi$  is given by  $V = (4g + 4)$ .*

*Proof.* We compute the volume using the residue formula (3.6). Recall that the Riemann zeta function has residue 1 at  $s = 1$ . In fact, the well-known formula

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow 1^+} (s - 1)\zeta_{\mathbb{K}}(s) = 2^{r_1}(2\pi)^{r_2}|d|^{-1/2}hRw^{-1}$$

holds for an arbitrary number field  $\mathbb{K}$ , with class number  $h$ ,  $w$  roots of unity, discriminant  $d$  and regulator  $R$ , with  $r_1$  and  $r_2$  counting the embeddings of  $\mathbb{K}$  into  $\mathbb{R}$  and  $\mathbb{C}$ . Applied to  $\mathbb{K} = \mathbb{Q}$  this yields the result. This implies that, for the zeta function computed in (3.27), we obtain

$$V = \text{Tr}_{\omega}(|\Phi|^{-1}) = \text{Res}_{s=1} \text{Tr}(|\Phi|^{-s}) = (4g + 4)\text{Res}_{s=1}\zeta(s) = (4g + 4). \quad (3.32)$$

□

Notice how, while the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\tilde{\Gamma}}$  in its natural hyperbolic metric has infinite volume, the Dirac operator  $\Phi$  induces on  $A(\tilde{\Gamma})$ , which is our noncommutative version of the handlebody, a metric of finite volume. This is an effect of letting  $\mathbb{R}[\tilde{\Gamma}]$  act via the Lefschetz  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$  representation.

It is evident from the calculation of the eigenspaces  $E_n(|\Phi|)$  in Example 3.20 that the Dirac operator  $\Phi$  has a spectral asymmetry ([2]). This corresponds to an eta invariant, which can be computed easily from the dimensions of the eigenspaces in Example 3.20, as follows.

**Example 3.22.** *The eta function of the Dirac operator  $\Phi$  is given by*

$$\eta_{\Phi}(s) := \sum_{0 \neq \lambda \in \text{Spec}(\Phi)} \text{sign}(\lambda) \frac{1}{|\lambda|^s} = 1 + \frac{1}{2^s}, \quad (3.33)$$

*The eta invariant  $\eta_{\Phi}(0) = 2$ , measuring the spectral asymmetry, is independent of  $g$ .*

### 3.5. Zeta function of the special fiber and Reidemeister torsion

In this section we show that the expression (3.26) of Theorem 3.19 can be interpreted as a *Reidemeister torsion*, and it is related to a zeta function for the fiber at arithmetic infinity.

We begin by giving the definition of a zeta function of the special fiber of a semistable fibration, which motivates the analogous notion at arithmetic infinity.

Let  $X$  be a regular, proper and flat scheme over  $\text{Spec}(\Lambda)$  for  $\Lambda$  a discrete valuation ring with quotient field  $K$  and finite residue field  $k$ . Assume that  $X$  has geometrically reduced, connected and one-dimensional fibers. Let us denote by  $\eta$  and  $v$  resp. the generic and the closed point of  $\text{Spec}(\Lambda)$  and by  $\bar{\eta}$  and  $\bar{v}$  the corresponding geometric points. Assume that the special fiber  $X_v$  of  $X$  is a connected, effective Cartier divisor with reduced normal crossings defined over  $k = k(v)$ . This degeneration is sometime referred to as a *semistable* fibration over  $\text{Spec}(\Lambda)$ .

Let  $N_v$  denote the cardinality of  $k$ . Then, define the zeta-function of the special fiber  $X_v$  as follows ( $u$  is an indeterminate):

$$Z_{X_v}(u) = \frac{P_1(u)}{P_0(u)P_2(u)}, \quad P_i(u) = \det(1 - f^*u \mid H^i(X_{\bar{\eta}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell)^{I_{\bar{v}}}), \quad (3.34)$$

where  $f^*$  is the geometric Frobenius i.e., the map induced by the Frobenius morphism  $f : X_{\bar{v}} \rightarrow X_{\bar{v}}$  on the cohomological inertia-invariants at  $\bar{v}$ .

The polynomials  $P_i(u)$  are closely related to the characteristic polynomials of the Frobenius

$$F_i(u) = \det(u \cdot 1 - f^* \mid H^i(X_{\bar{\eta}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell)^{I_{\bar{v}}})$$

through the formula

$$P_i(u) = u^{b_i} F_i(u^{-1}), \quad b_i = \text{degree}(F_i). \quad (3.35)$$

The zeta function  $Z_{X_v}(u)$  generalizes on a semistable fiber the description of the Hasse–Weil zeta function of a smooth, projective curve over a finite field.

Based on this construction we make the following definition for the fiber at an archimedean prime of an arithmetic surface:

$$Z_\Phi(u) := \frac{P_1(u)}{P_0(u)P_2(u)}, \quad (3.36)$$

where we set

$$P_q(u) := \det_\infty \left( \frac{1}{2\pi} - u \frac{\Phi_q}{2\pi} \right), \quad (3.37)$$

with  $\Phi_q = \Phi|_{H^q(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}}$ .

In order to see how this is related to the result of Theorem 3.19, we recall briefly a simple observation of Milnor (§3 [32]). Suppose given a finite complex  $L$  and an infinite cyclic covering  $\tilde{L}$ , with  $H_*(\tilde{L}, \kappa)$  finitely generated over the coefficient field  $\kappa$ . Let  $h : \pi_1 L \rightarrow \kappa(s)$  be the composition of the homomorphism  $\pi_1 L \rightarrow \Pi$  associated to the cover with the inclusion  $\Pi \subset \text{Units}(\kappa(s))$ . The Reidemeister torsion for this covering is given (up to multiplication by a unit of  $\kappa\Pi$ ) by the alternating product of the characteristic polynomials  $F_q(s)$  of the  $\kappa$ -linear map

$$s_* : H_q(\tilde{L}, \kappa) \rightarrow H_q(\tilde{L}, \kappa), \quad \tau(s) \simeq F_0(s)F_1(s)^{-1}F_2(s) \cdots F_n(s)^{\pm 1}. \quad (3.38)$$

Moreover, for a map  $T : L \rightarrow L$ , let  $\zeta_T(u)$  be the Weil zeta

$$\zeta_T(u) = P_0(u)^{-1}P_1(u)P_2(u)^{-1} \cdots P_n(u)^{\pm 1},$$

where the polynomials  $P_q(u)$  of the map  $T_*$  are related to the characteristic polynomials  $F_q(s)$  by (3.35) and  $b_q$  are the  $q$ -th Betti number of the complex  $L$ . By analogy with (3.38), Milnor writes the Reidemeister torsion  $\tau_T(s)$  (up to multiplication by a unit) as

$$\tau_T(s) := F_0(s)F_1(s)^{-1}F_2(s) \cdots F_n(s)^{\mp 1},$$

where  $F_q(s)$  are the characteristic polynomials of the map  $T_*$ . Then the relation between zeta function and Reidemeister torsion is given by

$$\zeta_T(s^{-1})\tau_T(s) = s^{\chi(L)}, \tag{3.39}$$

where  $\chi(L)$  is the Euler characteristic of  $L$ .

Similarly, we can derive the relation between the zeta function of the fiber at infinity defined as in (3.36) and the alternating product of Gamma factors in (3.26).

First notice that the expression (3.26) is of the form (3.38). Namely, we write

$$\frac{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)}{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s) \cdot L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)} = \frac{F_0(s) \cdot F_2(s)}{F_1(s)}, \tag{3.40}$$

where we set

$$F_q(s) := \det_{\infty} \left( \frac{s}{2\pi} - \frac{\Phi_q}{2\pi} \right), \tag{3.41}$$

with  $\Phi_q = \Phi|_{H^q(\bar{X}^*)_{N=0}}$ . For this reason we may regard (3.40) as the Reidemeister torsion of the fiber at arithmetic infinity:

$$\tau_{\Phi}(s) := \frac{F_0(s) \cdot F_2(s)}{F_1(s)}. \tag{3.42}$$

The relation between the zeta function and Reidemeister torsion is then given as follows.

**Proposition 3.23.** *The zeta function  $Z_{\Phi}$  of (3.36) and the Reidemeister torsion  $\tau_{\Phi}$  of (3.42) are related by*

$$Z_{\Phi}(s^{-1})\tau_{\Phi}(s) = s^{g-2}e^{\chi s \log s},$$

with  $g$  is the genus of the Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{C}$  and  $\chi = 2 - 2g$  its Euler characteristic.

*Proof.* The result follows by direct calculation of the regularized determinants as in Section 2.5. Namely, we compute (in the case  $q = 0, 1$ )

$$\begin{aligned}
 P_q(u) &= \det_\infty \left( \frac{1}{2\pi} - u \frac{\Phi_q}{2\pi} \right) = \exp \left( -b_q \frac{d}{dz} \left( (2\pi)^z \sum_{n \geq 0} (1 + un)^{-z} \right) \Big|_{z=0} \right) \\
 &= \exp \left( b_q \left( \log \Gamma \left( \frac{1}{u} \right) + \frac{\log 2\pi}{u} + \frac{\log u}{2} + \frac{\log u}{u} \right) \right) = u^{b_q/2} e^{-b_q \frac{\log u}{u}} (2\pi)^{-1/u} \Gamma(1/u),
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $b_q$  are the Betti numbers of  $X/\mathbb{C}$ . The case  $q = 2$  is analogous, but for the presence of the  $+1$  eigenvalue in the spectrum of  $\Phi_2$ , hence we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
 P_2(u) &= \exp \left( -b_2 \frac{d}{dz} \left( (2\pi)^z u^{-z} \zeta(1/u, z) - \left( \frac{1}{u} - 1 \right)^{-z} \right) \Big|_{z=0} \right) \\
 &= \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}} \left( \frac{1}{u} - 1 \right)^{-1} u^{-3/2} e^{\frac{\log u}{u}}.
 \end{aligned}$$

Thus, we obtain

$$Z_{\Phi}(s^{-1}) = \frac{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^0(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s) \cdot L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^2(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)}{L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^1(X/\mathbb{C}, \mathbb{C}), s)} s^{g-2} e^{\chi s \log s}. \quad \square$$

#### 4. Shift operator and dynamics

In this section we consider an arithmetic surface  $X$  over  $\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbb{K}})$ , with  $\mathbb{K}$  a number field, and a fixed archimedean prime which corresponds to a *real* embedding  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}$ . We also assume that the corresponding Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{R}$  is an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve of genus  $g \geq 2$ .

We consider a Schottky uniformization of the Riemann surface  $X/\mathbb{R}$  and the hyperbolic filling given by the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  that has  $X/\mathbb{R}$  as the conformal boundary at infinity,  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma} \cup X/\mathbb{R} = \Gamma \backslash (\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_{\Gamma})$ .

Geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  can be lifted to geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with ends on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . Among these, geodesics with one or both ends on  $\Omega_{\Gamma} \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  correspond to geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  that reach the boundary at infinity  $X/\mathbb{R} = \Gamma \backslash \Omega_{\Gamma}$  in infinite time. The geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with both ends on  $\Lambda_{\Gamma} \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  project in the quotient to geodesics contained in the *convex core*  $\mathfrak{C}_{\Gamma} = \Gamma \backslash \text{Hull}(\Lambda_{\Gamma})$  of  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$ . Since the Schottky group  $\Gamma$  is geometrically finite,  $\mathfrak{C}_{\Gamma}$  is a bounded region inside  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  ([31]). For this reason, geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  that lift to geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with both ends on  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}$  are called *bounded geodesics*.

We denote by  $\Xi \subset \mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  the image under the quotient map of all geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with endpoints on  $\Lambda_{\Gamma} \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , endowed with the induced topology. Similarly, we denote by  $\Xi_c \subset \Xi$  the image in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  of all geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with endpoints of the

form  $\{z^-(h), z^+(h)\}$  for some primitive  $h \in \Gamma$ . Here  $z^\pm(h)$  are the attractive and repelling fixed points of  $h$ , and the element  $h$  is primitive in  $\Gamma$  if it is not a power of some other element of  $\Gamma$ .

**Definition 4.1.** We denote by  $\tilde{\Xi}$  the orientation double cover of  $\Xi$  and we refer to it as the *infinite tangle of bounded geodesics*. Similarly, we define  $\tilde{\Xi}_c$  to be the orientation double cover of  $\Xi_c$  and we refer to it as the *tangle of primitive closed geodesics*.

Since  $\Xi$  is orientable,  $\tilde{\Xi} \cong \Xi \times \mathbb{Z}/2$ , where the second coordinate is the choice of an orientation on each geodesic. So, for instance, the geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with endpoints  $\{z^-(h), z^+(h)\}$  and  $\{z^+(h), z^-(h)\} = \{z^-(h^{-1}), z^+(h^{-1})\}$  correspond to the same closed geodesic in  $\Xi_c$ , while in the double cover  $\tilde{\Xi}_c$  they give rise to the two different lifts of the geodesic in  $\Xi_c$ .

More precisely, let  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  denote the geodesic in  $\mathbb{H}^3 \cong \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}^+$  with endpoints  $\{a, b\}$  in the complement of the diagonal in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \times \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . A parameterization for the geodesic  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  is given by

$$\tilde{L}_{\{a,b\}}(s) = \left( \frac{ae^s + be^{-s}}{e^s + e^{-s}}, \frac{|a - b|}{e^s + e^{-s}} \right) \quad s \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{4.1}$$

The parameter  $s$  in (4.1) determines a parameterization by arc length on the corresponding geodesic  $\pi_\Gamma(L_{\{a,b\}})$  in  $\tilde{\Xi}$ , where  $\pi_\Gamma : \mathbb{H}^3 \rightarrow \mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  is the quotient map. Then we have

$$\tilde{\Xi} = \{\pi_\Gamma(\tilde{L}_{\{a,b\}}(s)) : s \in \mathbb{R}, (a, b) \in (\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0\},$$

where

$$(\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0 := (\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma) \setminus \Delta$$

denotes the complement of the diagonal in  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$ .

**Remark 4.2.** The  $\mathbb{Z}/2$  involution on  $\tilde{\Xi}$  that has  $\Xi$  as quotient corresponds to the involution that exchanges the two factors in  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$ .

**Remark 4.3.** Notice that most constructions and results presented in this section are topological in nature, hence they do not require any assumption about the conformal structure of the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$ . In particular they are not sensitive to whether  $X$  is a complex or real smooth algebraic curve. However, when we refer to the results of the previous sections, by comparing the dynamical and archimedean cohomology in Theorem 5.7, we need to know that the  $\mathbb{Z}/2$  cover  $\tilde{\Xi}$  is compatible with the conformal structure on the Riemann surface. This requires the presence of the real structure, so that complex conjugation  $z \mapsto \bar{z}$  on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , which induces the change of orientation on the geodesics  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  in  $\mathbb{H}^3$ , determines an involution on the  $\Gamma$ -quotient.

According to [24], the tangle of bounded geodesics  $\tilde{\Xi}$  provides a geometric realization of the *dual graph*  $\mathcal{G}_\infty$  of the maximally degenerate closed fiber at arithmetic infinity.

In this section, we consider a resolution of  $\tilde{\Xi}$  by the mapping torus (suspension flow)  $\mathcal{S}_T$  of a dynamical system  $T$  (Proposition 4.11), with a surjection  $\mathcal{S}_T \rightarrow \tilde{\Xi}$ .

In Theorem 4.12 we give an explicit description of the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ . Such cohomology is endowed with a filtration whose graded pieces depend uniquely on the coding of geodesics in  $\tilde{\Xi}$  (Proposition 4.14 and Proposition 4.15).

#### 4.1. The limit set and the shift operator

Given a choice of a set of generators  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^g$  for the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ , there is a bijection between the elements of  $\Gamma$  and the set of all *reduced words* in the  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$ , where we use the notation  $g_{i+g} := g_i^{-1}$ , for  $i = 1, \dots, g$ . Here by reduced words we mean all finite sequences  $w = a_0 \dots a_\ell$  in the  $g_i$ , for any  $\ell \in \mathbb{N}$ , satisfying  $a_{i+1} \neq a_i^{-1}$  for all  $i = 0, \dots, \ell - 1$ .

We also consider the set  $\mathcal{S}^+$  of all right-infinite *reduced sequences* in the  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$ ,

$$\mathcal{S}^+ = \{a_0 a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots \mid a_i \in \{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}, a_{i+1} \neq a_i^{-1}, \forall i \in \mathbb{N}\}, \tag{4.2}$$

and the set  $\mathcal{S}$  of *doubly infinite reduced sequences* in the  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$ ,

$$\mathcal{S} = \{\dots a_{-m} \dots a_{-1} a_0 a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots \mid a_i \in \{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}, a_{i+1} \neq a_i^{-1}, \forall i \in \mathbb{Z}\}. \tag{4.3}$$

On the space  $\mathcal{S}$  we consider the topology generated by the sets  $W^s(x, \ell) = \{y \in \mathcal{S} \mid x_k = y_k, k \geq \ell\}$ , and the  $W^u(x, \ell) = \{y \in \mathcal{S} \mid x_k = y_k, k \leq \ell\}$  for  $x \in \mathcal{S}$  and  $\ell \in \mathbb{Z}$ . This induces a topology with analogous properties on  $\mathcal{S}^+$  by realizing it as a subset of  $\mathcal{S}$ , for instance, by extending each sequence to the left as a constant sequence.

We define the *one-sided shift operator*  $T$  on  $\mathcal{S}^+$  as the map

$$T(a_0 a_1 a_2 \dots a_\ell \dots) = a_1 a_2 \dots a_\ell \dots \tag{4.4}$$

We also define a *two-sided shift operator*  $T$  on  $\mathcal{S}$  as the map

$$T(\dots a_{-m} \dots a_{-1} a_0 a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots) = \dots a_{-m+1} \dots a_0 a_1 a_2 \dots a_{\ell+1} \dots \tag{4.5}$$

Given a choice of a base point  $x_0 \in \mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_\Gamma$  we can define a map  $Z : \mathcal{S}^+ \rightarrow \Lambda_\Gamma$  in the following way. For an eventually periodic sequence  $w \overline{a_0 \dots a_N} \in \mathcal{S}^+$ , with an initial word  $w$ , we set

$$Z(w \overline{a_0 \dots a_N}) = w z^+(a_0 \dots a_N). \tag{4.6}$$

Here we identify the finite reduced word  $w$  with an element in  $\Gamma$ , hence  $w z^+(a_0 \dots a_N)$  is the image under  $w \in \Gamma$  of the attractive fixed point of the element  $a_0 \dots a_N$  of  $\Gamma$ .

For sequences  $a_0 \dots a_\ell \dots$  that are not eventually periodic, we set

$$Z(a_0 \dots a_\ell \dots) = \lim_{\ell \rightarrow \infty} (a_0 \dots a_\ell)x_0, \tag{4.7}$$

where again we identify a finite reduced word  $a_0 \dots a_\ell$  with an element in  $\Gamma$ .

We also introduce the following notation. We denote by  $\mathcal{S}^+(w) \subset \mathcal{S}^+$  the set of right-infinite reduced sequences in the  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$  that begin with an assigned word  $w = a_0 \dots a_\ell$ . If  $g \in \Gamma$  is expressed as a reduced word  $w$  in the  $g_i$ , we write  $\Lambda_\Gamma(g) := Z(\mathcal{S}^+(w))$ .

In the following we denote by  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma$  the quotient by the diagonal action of  $\Gamma$  of the complement of the diagonal  $(\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0$ .

The group  $\Gamma$  acts on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  by fractional linear transformations, hence on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ , which is a  $\Gamma$ -invariant subset of  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ . The group  $\Gamma$  also acts on  $\mathcal{S}^+$ : an element  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ , identified with a reduced word  $\gamma = c_0 \dots c_k$  in the  $g_i$ , maps a sequence  $a_0 \dots a_\ell \dots$  to the sequence obtained from  $c_0 \dots c_k a_0 \dots a_\ell \dots$  by making the necessary cancellations that yield a reduced sequence.

**Lemma 4.4.** *The following properties are satisfied.*

1. *The spaces  $\mathcal{S}^+$  and  $\mathcal{S}$  are topologically Cantor sets. The one-sided shift  $T$  of (4.4) is a continuous surjective map on  $\mathcal{S}^+$ , while the two-sided shift  $T$  of (4.5) is a homeomorphism of  $\mathcal{S}$ .*
2. *The limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  with the topology induced by the embedding in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  is also a Cantor set, and the map  $Z$  of (4.6) and (4.7) is a homeomorphism. The shift operator  $T$  on  $\mathcal{S}^+$  induces the map  $ZTZ^{-1} : \Lambda_\Gamma \rightarrow \Lambda_\Gamma$  of the form*

$$ZTZ^{-1}|_{\Lambda_\Gamma(g_i)}(z) = g_i^{-1}(z).$$

3. *The map  $Z$  is  $\Gamma$ -equivariant.*

*Proof.* 1. The first claim can be verified easily.

2. It is not hard to see that the correspondence  $a_0 \dots a_\ell \dots \mapsto \lim_{\ell \rightarrow \infty} (a_0 \dots a_\ell)x_0$  gives a bijection between the complement of eventually periodic sequences in  $\mathcal{S}^+$  and the complement of the fixed points  $\{z^-(h), z^+(h)\}_{h \in \Gamma}$  in  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  ([19] Prop. 1.2). To see that the correspondence  $w\overline{a_0 \dots a_N} \mapsto w z^+(a_0 \dots a_N) = z^+(wa_0 \dots a_N w^{-1})$  is a bijection between the set of eventually periodic sequences and the set of fixed points  $\{z^-(h), z^+(h)\}_{h \in \Gamma}$  in  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ , we proceed as in [19]. For any  $h \in \Gamma$ ,  $h$  can be written as a reduced word  $h = a_0 \dots a_\ell$  in the  $g_i$ 's. If this word satisfies  $a_\ell \neq a_0^{-1}$ , then  $Z^{-1}(z^+(h)) = \overline{a_0 \dots a_\ell}$  and  $Z^{-1}(z^-(h)) = \overline{a_\ell^{-1} \dots a_0^{-1}}$ . If  $a_\ell = a_0^{-1}$ , then there is an element  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ , such that  $h = \gamma a_{i_k} \dots a_{i_{k+N}} \gamma^{-1}$ , with  $a_{i_{k+N}} \neq a_{i_k}^{-1}$ . In this case  $Z^{-1}(z^+(h)) = \overline{\gamma a_{i_k} \dots a_{i_{k+N}}}$  and  $Z^{-1}(z^-(h)) = \overline{\gamma a_{i_{k+N}}^{-1} \dots a_{i_k}^{-1}}$ . As a continuous bijection from a compact to a Hausdorff space,  $Z$  is a homeomorphism. The expression for  $ZTZ^{-1}$  is then immediate.

3. By continuity it is sufficient to check that the map  $Z$  restricted to the dense subset

$$\{z^-(h), z^+(h)\}_{h \in \Gamma} \subset \Lambda_\Gamma$$

is  $\Gamma$ -equivariant. This was proved already in 2, since  $Z(\gamma \overline{a_0 \dots a_N}) = \gamma z^+(a_0 \dots a_N)$ . □

We recall two notions that will be useful in the following.

Let  $A = (A_{ij})$  be an  $N \times N$  elementary matrix. The *subshift of finite type* with *transition matrix*  $A$  is the subset of the set of all doubly infinite sequences in the alphabet  $\{1, \dots, N\}$  of the form

$$\mathcal{S}_A := \{ \dots i_{-m} \dots i_{-1} i_0 i_1 \dots i_\ell \dots \mid 1 \leq i_k \leq N, A_{i_k i_{k+1}} = 1, \forall k \in \mathbb{Z} \}. \quad (4.8)$$

A double sided shift operator of the form (4.5) can be defined on any subshift of finite type.

In the following we will consider the case where the elementary matrix  $A$  is the symmetric  $2g \times 2g$  matrix with  $A_{ij} = 0$  for  $|i - j| = g$  and  $A_{ij} = 1$  otherwise.

**Definition 4.5.** The pair  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  of a space and a homeomorphism is a *Smale space* if locally  $\mathcal{S}$  can be decomposed as the product of expanding and contracting directions for  $T$ . Namely, the following properties are satisfied.

1. For every point  $x \in \mathcal{S}$  there exist subsets  $W^s(x)$  and  $W^u(x)$  of  $\mathcal{S}$ , such that  $W^s(x) \times W^u(x)$  is homeomorphic to a neighborhood of  $x$ .
2. The map  $T$  is contracting on  $W^s(x)$  and expanding on  $W^u(x)$ , and  $W^s(Tx)$  and  $T(W^s(x))$  agree in some neighborhood of  $x$ , and so do  $W^u(Tx)$  and  $T(W^u(x))$ .

**Lemma 4.6.** *The following properties are satisfied.*

1. The map  $Q : \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$

$$Q(\dots a_{-m} \dots a_{-1} a_0 a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots) = (Z(a_{-1}^{-1} a_{-2}^{-1} \dots a_{-m}^{-1} \dots), Z(a_0 a_1 a_2 \dots a_\ell \dots))$$

is an embedding of the space  $\mathcal{S}$  in the cartesian product  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$ . The image of the embedding  $Q$  is given by  $\text{Im}(Q) = \bigcup_{i \neq j} \Lambda_\Gamma(g_i) \times \Lambda_\Gamma(g_j)$ . On  $\text{Im}(Q)$  the two-sided shift operator  $T$  of (4.5) induces the map  $QTQ^{-1}$

$$QTQ^{-1}|_{\Lambda_\Gamma(g_i) \times \Lambda_\Gamma(g_j)}( Z(g_i b_1 b_2 \dots b_m \dots), Z(g_j a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots) ) = ( Z(g_j^{-1} g_i b_1 \dots b_m \dots), g_j^{-1} g_j Z(a_1 a_2 \dots a_\ell \dots) ).$$

2. The map  $Q : \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$  descends to a homeomorphism of the quotients

$$\bar{Q} : \mathcal{S}/T \xrightarrow{\cong} \Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma.$$

3. The space  $\mathcal{S}$  can be identified with the subshift of finite type  $\mathcal{S}_A$  with the symmetric  $2g \times 2g$  matrix  $A = (A_{ij})$  with  $A_{ij} = 0$  for  $|i - j| = g$  and  $A_{ij} = 1$  otherwise.

The two-sided shift operator  $T$  on  $\mathcal{S}$  of (4.5) decomposes  $\mathcal{S}$  in a product of expanding and contracting directions, so that  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  is a Smale space.

*Proof.* 1. The first claim follows directly from the definitions and Lemma 4.4.

2. Notice that  $\text{Im}(Q)$  intersects each  $\Gamma$  orbit in the complement of the diagonal  $(\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0$ . Moreover, if  $(a, b) = Q(x)$ , then for  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  the element  $(\gamma a, \gamma b)$  is in  $\text{Im}(Q)$  iff  $b \in \Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma^{-1})$ , and in that case  $(\gamma a, \gamma b) = Q(T^n x)$ , for  $n = \text{length}(\gamma)$  as a reduced word in the  $g_i$ . The statement on  $\bar{Q}$  then follows easily.

3. We write  $\mathcal{S}$  as the shift of finite type  $\mathcal{S}_A$ . Namely, we identify a reduced sequence

$$\dots a_{-m} \dots a_{-1} a_0 a_1 \dots a_\ell \dots$$

where each  $a_k = g_{i_k} \in \{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$  with the sequence  $\dots i_{-m} \dots i_{-1} i_0 i_1 \dots i_\ell \dots$  satisfying  $A_{i_k i_{k+1}} = 1$ , for all  $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ .

Then, for subshifts of finite type with the double sided shift (4.5), the sets

$$W^u(x) = \cup_{\ell \in \mathbb{Z}} W^u(x, \ell),$$

with

$$W^u(x, \ell) := \{y \in \mathcal{S} \mid x_k = y_k, k \leq \ell\}$$

and

$$W^s(x) = \cup_{\ell \in \mathbb{Z}} W^s(x, \ell).$$

with

$$W^s(x, \ell) := \{y \in \mathcal{S} \mid x_k = y_k, k \geq \ell\}$$

give the expanding and contracting directions, so that  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  satisfies the properties of a Smale space ([37]). □

The homeomorphism of Lemma 4.6.2 at the level of the quotient spaces is sufficient for our purposes, but the identification could be strengthened at the level of the groupoids of the equivalence relations rather than on the quotients themselves, hence giving an actual identification of noncommutative spaces.

**Remark 4.7.** It is well known that one can associate different  $C^*$ -algebras to Smale spaces ([42], [37], [38]). For the Smale space  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  we consider, there are four possibilities: the crossed product algebra  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  and the  $C^*$ -algebras  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^s) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$ ,  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^u) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$ ,  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^a) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  obtained by considering the action of the shift  $T$  on the groupoid  $C^*$ -algebra (see [40] for the definition of such algebra) associated to the groupoids  $\mathcal{G}^s$ ,  $\mathcal{G}^u$ ,  $\mathcal{G}^a$  of the stable, unstable, and asymptotic equivalence relations on  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$ .

In the following we consider the algebras  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  and  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^u) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  and show that the first is a noncommutative space describing the quotient  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma$  and the second is a noncommutative space describing the quotient  $\Lambda_\Gamma/\Gamma$ .

**4.2. Coding of geodesics**

Since the Schottky group  $\Gamma$  is a free group consisting of only loxodromic elements, the coding of geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  in terms of the dynamical system  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  is particularly simple. The following facts are well known. We recall them briefly for convenience.

We denote by  $\mathcal{S}^p \subset \mathcal{S}$  the set of periodic reduced sequences in the  $g_i$ , i.e. the set of periodic points of the shift  $T$ . We define

$$\hat{\Xi} := \{ \pi_\Gamma(L_{\{a,b\}}) : (a, b) \in (\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0 \},$$

and

$$\hat{\Xi}_c := \{ \pi_\Gamma(L_{\{z^+(h), z^-(h)\}}) : h \in \Gamma \setminus id \},$$

where  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  denotes the geodesic in  $\mathbb{H}^3 \cong \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}^+$  with endpoints  $\{a, b\}$ .

The following lemma gives a coding of the primitive closed geodesics in  $\hat{\Xi}_c$  by the quotient  $\mathcal{S}^p/T$ .

**Lemma 4.8.** *The correspondence*

$$\mathcal{L}_c : \overline{w a_0 \dots a_N} \mapsto \pi_\Gamma(L_{\{w z^+(a_0 \dots a_N), w z^-(a_0 \dots a_N)\}})$$

*induces a bijection between  $\mathcal{S}^p/T$  and  $\hat{\Xi}_c$ .*

*Proof.* Arguing as in Lemma 4.4, we see that every closed geodesic in  $\hat{\Xi}_c$  is of the form

$$\pi_\Gamma(L_{\{z^+(a_0 \dots a_N), z^-(a_0 \dots a_N)\}})$$

for some reduced sequence  $a_0 \dots a_N$  with  $a_N \neq a_0^{-1}$ . If two elements  $\overline{a_0, a_2, \dots, a_N}$  and  $\overline{b_0, b_1, \dots, b_M}$  of  $\mathcal{S}^p$  represent the same primitive closed geodesic, then the elements  $h_a = a_0 a_2 \dots a_N$  and  $h_b = b_0 b_1 \dots b_M$  are conjugate in  $\Gamma$ ,  $h_a = g h_b g^{-1}$ , by an element  $g = c_1 c_2 \dots c_k$ . It is easy to see that this implies  $c_k = b_0^{-1}$ ,  $c_{k-1} = b_1^{-1}$ , etc. so that for some  $1 \leq N_0 \leq N$ , we have

$$\overline{b_0, b_1, \dots, b_M} = T^{N_0}(\overline{a_0, a_1, \dots, a_N}),$$

that is, the two sequences are in the same equivalence class modulo the action of  $T$ . We refer to [19] for details. □

Via the map  $\mathcal{L}_c$  of Lemma 4.8 we can define on  $\hat{\Xi}_c$  a topology which makes it homeomorphic to the quotient  $\mathcal{S}^p/T$ . Similarly, we obtain a coding of geodesics in  $\hat{\Xi}$  by the quotient space  $\mathcal{S}/T$ .

**Lemma 4.9.** *The map  $\mathcal{L} : \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \hat{\Xi}$ ,  $\mathcal{L} : x \mapsto \pi_\Gamma(L_{\{a,b\}})$ , for  $x \in \mathcal{S}$  and  $(a, b) = Q(x)$  in  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma$ , induces a bijection between  $\mathcal{S}/T$  and  $\hat{\Xi}$ .*

*Proof.* Any geodesic in  $\tilde{\Xi}$  lifts to a geodesic in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with ends  $(a, b)$  in the complement of the diagonal  $(\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0$ . Notice that in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  we have  $\gamma L_{\{a,b\}} = L_{\{\gamma a, \gamma b\}}$ . The claim then follows easily.  $\square$

Via the map  $\mathcal{L}$  of Lemma 4.9 we can define on  $\hat{\Xi}$  a topology which makes it homeomorphic to the quotient  $\mathcal{S}/T$ .

We introduce a topological space defined in terms of the Smale space  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$ , which we consider as a graph associated to the fiber at arithmetic infinity. This maps onto the dual graph  $\tilde{\Xi}$  considered in [24].

**Definition 4.10.** The mapping torus (suspension flow) of the dynamical system  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  is defined as

$$\mathcal{S}_T := \mathcal{S} \times [0, 1]/(x, 0) \sim (Tx, 1). \tag{4.9}$$

Consider the map  $\tilde{Q} : \mathcal{S}_T \rightarrow \tilde{\Xi}$ , defined by

$$\tilde{Q}([x, t]) = \pi_\Gamma \tilde{L}_{\{a,b\}}(s(x, t)), \tag{4.10}$$

where  $(a, b) = Q(x)$  in  $(\Lambda_\Gamma \times \Lambda_\Gamma)^0$ . Notice that the map  $\tilde{Q}$  yields a geodesic in the handlebody, but the parameterization induced by the time coordinate  $t$  on the mapping torus, in general, will not agree with the natural parameterization of the geodesic by the arc length  $s$ . In fact, the induced parameterization, here denoted by  $s(x, t)$ , has the property that the geodesic line  $\tilde{L}_{\{a,b\}}(s(x, t))$  in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  crosses a fundamental domain for the action of  $\Gamma$  in time  $t \in [0, 1]$ .

**Proposition 4.11.** *The map  $\tilde{Q} : \mathcal{S}_T \rightarrow \tilde{\Xi}$  of (4.10) is a continuous surjection. It is a bijection away from the intersection points of different geodesics in  $\tilde{\Xi}$ .*

*Proof.* The parameterization  $s(t)$  is chosen in such a way that the map (4.10) is well defined on equivalence classes. By 2 of Lemma 4.6 and Lemma 4.9 the map is a continuous surjection.  $\square$

### 4.3. Cohomology and homology of $\mathcal{S}_T$

We give an explicit description of the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$ .

**Theorem 4.12.** *The cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  satisfies the following properties.*

1. *There is an identification of  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  with the  $K_0$ -group of the crossed product  $C^*$ -algebra for the action of  $T$  on  $\mathcal{S}$ ,*

$$H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) \cong K_0(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}). \tag{4.11}$$

2. The identification (4.11) endows  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  with a filtration by free abelian groups  $F_0 \hookrightarrow F_1 \hookrightarrow \dots \hookrightarrow F_n \hookrightarrow \dots$ , with  $\text{rank } F_0 = 2g$  and  $\text{rank } F_n = 2g(2g - 1)^{n-1}(2g - 2) + 1$ , for  $n \geq 1$ , so that

$$H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) = \varinjlim_n F_n.$$

*Proof.* 1. The shift  $T$  acting on  $\mathcal{S}$  induces an automorphism of the  $C^*$ -algebra of continuous functions  $C(\mathcal{S})$ . With an abuse of notation we still denote it by  $T$ . Consider the crossed product  $C^*$ -algebra  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$ . This is a suitable norm completion of  $C(\mathcal{S})[T, T^{-1}]$  with product  $(V * W)_k = \sum_{r \in \mathbb{Z}} V_k \cdot (T^r W_{r+k})$ , for  $V = \sum_k V_k T^k$ ,  $W = \sum_k W_k T^k$ , and  $V * W = \sum_k (V * W)_k T^k$ .

The  $K$ -theory group  $K_0(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z})$  is described by the co-invariants of the action of  $T$  ([8],[34]). Namely, let  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  be the set of continuous functions from  $\mathcal{S}$  to the integers. This is an abelian group generated by characteristic functions of clopen sets of  $\mathcal{S}$ . The *invariants* and *co-invariants* are given respectively by  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})^T := \{f \in C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \mid f - f \circ T = 0\}$  and  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T := C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})/B(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$ , with  $B(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) := \{f - f \circ T \mid f \in C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})\}$ . We have the following result ([8]):

- The  $C^*$ -algebra  $C(\mathcal{S})$  is a commutative AF-algebra (approximately finite-dimensional), obtained as the direct limit of the finite dimensional commutative  $C^*$ -algebras generated by characteristic functions of a covering of  $\mathcal{S}$ . Thus,  $K_0(C(\mathcal{S})) \cong C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$ , being the direct limit of the  $K_0$ -groups of the finite-dimensional commutative  $C^*$ -algebras, and  $K_1(C(\mathcal{S})) = 0$  for the same reason.
- The Pimsner–Voiculescu exact sequence (cf. [35]) then becomes of the form

$$0 \rightarrow K_1(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \xrightarrow{I - T^*} C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow K_0(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow 0, \quad (4.12)$$

with  $K_0(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}) \cong C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T$ . Since the shift  $T$  is *topologically transitive*, i.e., it has a dense orbit, we also have  $K_1(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}) \cong C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})^T \cong \mathbb{Z}$ .

Now consider the cohomology group  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$ . Via the identification with Čech cohomology, we can identify  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  with the group of homotopy classes of continuous maps of  $\mathcal{S}_T$  to the circle. The isomorphism

$$C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T \cong H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) \quad (4.13)$$

is then given explicitly by

$$f \mapsto [\exp(2\pi i t f(x))], \quad (4.14)$$

for  $f \in C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  and with  $[\cdot]$  the homotopy class. The map is well defined on the equivalence class of  $f \bmod B(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  since, for an element  $f - h + h \circ T$  the function

$$\exp(2\pi i t(f - h + h \circ T)(x)) = \exp(2\pi i t f(x)) \exp(2\pi i((1 - t)h(x) + th(T(x)))),$$

since  $h$  is integer valued, but  $\exp(2\pi i((1 - t)h(x) + th(T(x))))$  is homotopic to the constant function equal to 1. It is not hard to see that (4.14) gives the desired isomorphism (4.13) (§4-5 [8]). This proves the first statement.

2. There is a filtration on the set of coinvariants  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T$  (Theorem 19 §4 of [34]). It is obtained in the following way. First, it is possible to identify

$$C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T = C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})/B(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \cong \mathcal{P}/\delta\mathcal{P}, \tag{4.15}$$

where  $\mathcal{P} \subset C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  is the set of functions that depend only on future coordinates, and  $\delta$  is the operator  $\delta(f) = f - f \circ T$ . In fact, since characteristic functions of clopen sets in  $\mathcal{S}$  depend only on finitely many coordinates, any function in  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$ , when composed with a sufficiently high power of  $T$  becomes a function only of the future coordinates, i.e., of  $\mathcal{S}^+$ , the set of (right) infinite reduced sequences in the generators of  $\Gamma$  and their inverses,  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$ . Since all the  $f \circ T^k$ ,  $k \geq 0$ , define the same equivalence class in  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})_T$ , we have the identification of (4.15).

Then  $\mathcal{P}$  can be identified with  $C(\mathcal{S}^+, \mathbb{Z})$  viewed as the submodule of the  $\mathbb{Z}$ -module  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  of functions that only depend on future coordinates. As such, it is generated by characteristic functions of clopen subsets of  $\mathcal{S}^+$ . A basis of clopen sets for the topology of  $\mathcal{S}^+$  is given by the sets  $\mathcal{S}^+(w) \subset \mathcal{S}^+$ , where  $w = a_0 \dots a_N$  is a reduced word in the  $g_i$  and  $\mathcal{S}^+(w)$  is the set of reduced right-infinite sequences  $b_0 b_1 b_2 \dots b_n \dots$  such that  $b_k = a_k$  for  $k = 0 \dots N$ . Thus,  $\mathcal{P}$  has a filtration  $\mathcal{P} = \cup_{n=0}^\infty \mathcal{P}_n$ , where  $\mathcal{P}_n$  is generated by the characteristic functions of  $\mathcal{S}^+(w)$  with  $w$  of length at most  $n + 1$ . Taking into account the relations between these, we obtain that  $\mathcal{P}_n$  is a free abelian group generated by the characteristic functions of  $\mathcal{S}^+(w)$  with  $w$  of length exactly  $n + 1$ . The number of such words is  $2g(2g - 1)^n$ , hence  $\text{rank } \mathcal{P}_n = 2g(2g - 1)^n$ .

The map  $\delta$  satisfies  $\delta : \mathcal{P}_n \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{n+1}$ , with a 1-dimensional kernel given by the constant functions. More precisely, if we write  $f(a_0 \dots a_n)$  for a function in  $\mathcal{P}_n$ , then

$$(\delta f)(a_0 \dots a_n a_{n+1}) = f(a_0 \dots a_n) - f(a_1 \dots a_{n+1}).$$

The resulting quotients

$$F_n = \mathcal{P}_n / \delta\mathcal{P}_{n-1}$$

are torsion free (Theorem 19 §4 of [34]) and have ranks

$$\text{rank } F_n = 2g(2g - 1)^{n-1}(2g - 2) + 1$$

for  $n \geq 1$ , while  $F_0 \cong \mathcal{P}_0$  is of rank  $2g$ . There is an injection  $F_n \hookrightarrow F_{n+1}$  induced by the inclusion  $\mathcal{P}_n \subset \mathcal{P}_{n+1}$ , and  $\mathcal{P}/\delta\mathcal{P}$  is the direct limit of the  $F_n$  under these inclusions. Thus we obtain the filtration on  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$ :

$$H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) = \varinjlim_n F_n.$$

This proves the second statement. □

**Remark 4.13.** There is an interesting degree shift between the  $K$ -group  $K_0(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z})$  of the crossed product algebras associated to the Smale space  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$  and the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$ . This degree shift is a general phenomenon ([9], [10]) related to the Thom isomorphism (7.4), as we shall discuss in §7.

The following result computes the first homology of  $\mathcal{S}_T$ .

**Proposition 4.14.** *The homology group  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  has a filtration by free abelian groups  $\mathcal{K}_N$ ,*

$$H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) = \varinjlim_N \mathcal{K}_N, \tag{4.16}$$

with

$$K_N = \text{rank}(\mathcal{K}_N) = \begin{cases} (2g - 1)^N + 1 & N \text{ even} \\ (2g - 1)^N + (2g - 1) & N \text{ odd.} \end{cases}$$

The group  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  can also be written as

$$H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) = \bigoplus_{N=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{R}_N$$

where  $\mathcal{R}_n$  is a free abelian group of ranks  $R_1 = 2g$  and

$$R_N = \text{rank}(\mathcal{R}_N) = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{d|N} \mu(d) (2g - 1)^{N/d},$$

for  $N > 1$ , with  $\mu$  the Möbius function. This is isomorphic to the free abelian group on countably many generators,  $\mathbb{Z}\langle \mathcal{S}^p/T \rangle$ .

*Proof.* The lines  $\{[x, t] : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$  are pairwise disjoint in the mapping torus  $\mathcal{S}_T$ , hence  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  is generated by closed curves  $\{[x, t] : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$ . By construction, a closed curve in  $\mathcal{S}_T$  corresponds to a point  $x \in \mathcal{S}$  such that  $T^N x = x$  for some  $N \geq 1$ . More precisely, if  $x = \overline{a_0 \dots a_N}$  is a doubly infinite periodic sequence in  $\mathcal{S}$ , obtained by repeating the word  $a_0 \dots a_N$ , so that  $T^N x = x$ , then the map  $c_x : S^1 \rightarrow \mathcal{S}_T$  of the form

$$c_x : e^{2\pi it} \mapsto [(x, Nt)], \quad T^N x = x \tag{4.17}$$

defines a closed curve in  $\mathcal{S}_T$ , which is a nontrivial homology class in  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$ . Since all nontrivial homology classes can be obtained this way, the homology  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  is generated by all  $c_x$  as in (4.17), for  $x$  a reduced word  $a_0 \dots a_N$  such that  $a_N \neq a_0^{-1}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{K}_N$  be the free abelian groups generated by all the reduced words  $a_0 \dots a_N$  of length  $N + 1$  satisfying  $a_N \neq a_0^{-1}$ . When we identify the elements of the  $\mathcal{K}_N$  with homology classes via (4.17), we introduce relations between the  $\mathcal{K}_N$  for different  $N$ , namely we have embeddings  $k\mathcal{K}_N \hookrightarrow \mathcal{K}_{kN}$ ,

$$k\langle a_0 \dots a_N \rangle \mapsto \underbrace{\langle a_0 \dots a_N a_0 \dots a_N \dots a_0 \dots a_N \rangle}_{k\text{-times}}. \tag{4.18}$$

Thus, the homology  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  is computed as the limit  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) = \lim_N \mathcal{K}_N$  with respect to the maps  $J_k : \mathcal{K}_N \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_{kN}$  that send the  $c_x$  of (4.17) to the composite

$$S^1 \xrightarrow{z \mapsto z^k} S^1 \xrightarrow{c_x} \mathcal{S}_T.$$

Thus, the homology  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  can be identified with the  $\mathbb{Z}$ -module generated by the elements of  $\mathcal{S}^p/T$ . This quotient can be written as a disjoint union  $\mathcal{S}^p/T = \cup_{n=0}^\infty \mathcal{S}_n^p/T$ , where  $\mathcal{S}_n^p \subset \mathcal{S}^p$  is the subset of (primitive) periodic sequences with period of length  $n + 1$ . This gives the description of  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  as direct sum of the  $\mathcal{R}_n = \mathbb{Z}\langle \mathcal{S}_n^p/T \rangle$ .

The computation of the ranks of the  $\mathcal{K}_N$  and the  $\mathcal{R}_n$  is obtained as follows. For a fixed  $a_0$ , denote by  $p(N, k)$  the number of reduced sequences  $a_0 \dots a_N$ , such that the last  $k$  terms are all equal to  $a_0^{-1}$ . Then  $2g \cdot p(N, 0) = \text{rank } \mathcal{K}_N$ . Moreover, since the total number of all reduced sequences of length  $N + 1$  is  $2g(2g - 1)^N$ , we have  $\sum_{k=0}^N p(N, k) = (2g - 1)^N$ . It is not hard to see from the definition that the  $p(N, k)$  satisfy  $p(N, k) = p(N + 1, k + 1)$ ,  $p(N, N) = 0$ ,  $p(1, 0) = 2g - 1$ ,  $p(N, 0) = p(N + 1, 1) + p(N - 1, 0)$ .

The calculation of  $p(N, 0)$  then follows inductively, using  $p(N, 1) = p(N - 1, 0) - p(N - 2, 0)$ , and the sum  $\sum_{k=0}^N p(N, k) = (2g - 1)^N$ , where  $p(N, k) = p(N - k + 1, 1)$ .

The rank of the  $\mathcal{R}_N$  can be computed by first considering that  $\mathcal{K}_N = \sum_{d|N} d R_d$ , since the total number of reduced sequences  $a_0 \dots a_N$  with  $a_N \neq a_0^{-1}$  is the sum of the cardinalities of the  $\mathcal{S}_d^p$  over all  $d$  dividing  $N$ . These satisfy  $\#\mathcal{S}_d^p = d R_d$ . Then we obtain

$$R_N = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{d|N} \mu(d) K_{N/d} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{d|N} \mu(d) (2g - 1)^{N/d},$$

using the Möbius inversion formula in the first equality and the fact that  $\sum_{d|N} \mu(d) = \delta_{N,1}$  in the second. □

Combining Theorem 4.12 with Proposition 4.14, we can compute explicitly the pairing of homology and cohomology for  $\mathcal{S}_T$ . This relates the filtration by the  $F_n$  on the cohomology of  $\mathcal{S}_T$  to the coding of closed geodesics in  $\tilde{\Xi}_c$ .

**Proposition 4.15.** *Let  $F_n$  and  $\mathcal{K}_N$  be the filtrations defined, respectively, in Theorem 4.12 and Proposition 4.14. There is a pairing*

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : F_n \times \mathcal{K}_N \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} \quad \langle [f], x \rangle = N \cdot f(\bar{x}), \tag{4.19}$$

with  $x = a_0 \dots a_N$ . Here the representative  $f \in [f]$  is a function that depends on the first  $n + 1$  terms  $a_0 \dots a_n$  of sequences in  $\mathcal{S}$ , and  $\bar{x}$  is the truncation of the periodic sequence  $\overline{a_0 \dots a_N}$  after the first  $n$  terms. This pairing descends to the direct limits of the filtrations, where it agrees with the classical cohomology/homology pairing

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) \times H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}. \tag{4.20}$$

*Proof.* First, it is not hard to check that the pairing (4.19) is compatible with the maps  $F_n \hookrightarrow F_{n+1}$  and  $J_k : \mathcal{K}_N \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_{kN}$ . In fact, (4.19) is invariant under the maps

$F_n \hookrightarrow F_{n+1}$ , while under the map  $J_k : \mathcal{K}_N \hookrightarrow \mathcal{K}_{kN}$  we have

$$\langle [f], J_k(x) \rangle = kNf(\bar{x}) = k \langle [f], x \rangle.$$

Thus, (4.19) induces a pairing of the direct limits

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : \varinjlim_n F_n \times \varinjlim_N \mathcal{K}_N \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}. \tag{4.21}$$

In order to check that (4.21) agrees with the cohomology/homology pairing (4.20), notice that a class  $c$  in the homology  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  is realized as a finite linear combination of oriented circles in  $\mathcal{S}_T$ , where each such circle is described by a map  $c_x : S^1 \rightarrow \mathcal{S}_T$  of the form (4.17).

The pairing  $\langle u, c \rangle$  of an element  $u$  of the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  with a generator  $c$  of the homology  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  is given by the homotopy class  $[u \circ c]$  of

$$u \circ c : S^1 \rightarrow S^1.$$

We write  $u(x, t) = [2\pi itf(x)]$ , for a generator of  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  in  $F_n$ , where  $f$  is an element in  $\mathcal{P}_n$ , which depends only on the first  $n + 1$  terms in the sequences  $a_0 \dots a_n \dots$  in  $\mathcal{S}_T$  (Theorem 4.12). If  $y = a_0 \dots a_d$  is an element in  $\mathcal{R}_d$  of period  $d$ , and  $c$  is the corresponding generator of  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z})$  of the form  $c_x(t) = [(x, d \cdot t) : x = \overline{a_0 \dots a_d}]$ , then the homotopy class  $[u \circ c_x] \in \pi_1(S^1) = \mathbb{Z}$  is equal to  $d \cdot f(x)$  and this proves the claim.  $\square$

### 5. Dynamical (co)homology of the fiber at infinity

In this section we consider the filtered vector space  $\mathcal{P}_\kappa = \mathcal{P} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \kappa$ , for  $\kappa = \mathbb{R}$  or  $\mathbb{C}$ , where  $\mathcal{P}$  is the filtered  $\mathbb{Z}$  module  $\mathcal{P} \subset C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z})$  of functions depending on future coordinates, as in Theorem 4.12. Thus,  $\mathcal{P}_\kappa$  can be identified with the subspace of  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  of locally constant  $\kappa$ -valued functions. With a slight abuse of notation, we drop the explicit mention of  $\kappa$  and use the same term  $\mathcal{P}$  to denote the vector space, and the notation  $\mathcal{P}_n$  for its finite-dimensional linear subspaces of  $\kappa$ -valued functions that are constant on  $\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma) \subset \Lambda_\Gamma$ , for all  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  of word length  $|\gamma| > n + 1$ .

We provide a choice of a linear subspace  $\mathcal{V}$  of the filtered vector space  $\mathcal{P}$ , which is isomorphic to the archimedean cohomology of Section 2, compatible with the graded structure of the archimedean cohomology and the grading associated to the orthogonal projections of  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  onto the subspaces  $\mathcal{P}_n$ .

The space  $\mathcal{P}$  carries an action of an involution, which we denote  $\bar{F}_\infty$  by analogy with the real Frobenius acting on the cohomologies of §2. In Theorem 5.7 we also show that the embedding of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  in  $\mathcal{P}$  is equivariant with respect to the action of the real Frobenius.

The image of the subspace  $\mathcal{V}$  under the quotient map by the image of the coboundary  $\delta = 1 - T$  determines a subspace  $\bar{\mathcal{V}}$  of the dynamical cohomology isomorphic to the archimedean cohomology. The *dynamical cohomology*  $H_{dyn}^1$  is

defined as the graded vector space given by the sum of the graded pieces of the filtration of  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ , introduced in Theorem 4.12. These graded pieces  $\text{Gr}_p$  are considered with coefficients in the  $p$ -th Hodge–Tate twist  $\mathbb{R}(p)$ .

Similarly, we define a *dynamical homology*  $H_1^{\text{dyn}}$  as the graded vector space given by the sum of the terms in the filtration of  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ , introduced in Proposition 4.14. These vector spaces are again considered with twisted  $\mathbb{R}(p)$ -coefficients. The resulting graded vector space also has an action of a real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$ . Theorem 5.12 shows that there is an identification of the dual of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ , under the duality isomorphisms in  $\mathbb{H}(X^*)$  of (2.18), with a subspace of  $H_1^{\text{dyn}}$ . The identification is compatible with the  $\bar{F}_\infty$  action induced by the change of orientation  $z \mapsto \bar{z}$  on  $X/\mathbb{R}$ .

The pair

$$H_{\text{dyn}}^1 \oplus H_1^{\text{dyn}} \tag{5.1}$$

provides a geometric setting, defined in terms of the dynamics of the shift operator  $T$ , which contains a copy of the archimedean cohomology  $H^1(X^*)^{N=0}$  and of its dual under the duality isomorphisms acting on  $\mathbb{H}(\text{Cone}(N))$ . In Theorem 5.12 we also prove that under these identifications the duality isomorphism corresponds to the homology/cohomology pairing between  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$  and  $H_1(\mathcal{S}_T)$ .

This construction also shows that the map  $1 - T$  plays, in this dynamical setting, a role dual to the monodromy map  $N$  of the arithmetic construction of Section 2 (cf. Remark 5.13).

### 5.1. Dynamical (co)homology

The terms  $F_n$  in the filtration of theorem 4.12 define real (or complex) vector spaces, which we still denote  $F_n$ , in the filtration of the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{C})$ . Since, as  $\mathbb{Z}$ -modules, the  $F_n$  are torsion free, the vector spaces obtained by tensoring with  $\mathbb{R}$  or  $\mathbb{C}$  are of dimension  $\dim F_n = 2g(2g - 1)^{n-1}(2g - 2) + 1$  for  $n \geq 1$  and  $\dim F_0 = 2g$ . We make the following definition.

**Definition 5.1.** Let  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{R}) = \varinjlim_n F_n$ , for a filtration  $F_n$  as in Theorem 4.12, with real coefficients. Let  $\text{Gr}_n = F_n/F_{n-1}$  be the corresponding graded pieces, with  $\text{Gr}_0 = F_0$ . We define the *dynamical cohomology* as

$$H_{\text{dyn}}^1 := \oplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{\text{dyn}}^1, \tag{5.2}$$

where we set

$$gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{\text{dyn}}^1 := \text{Gr}_{-p} \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{R}(p) \tag{5.3}$$

with  $\mathbb{R}(p) = (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \mathbb{R}$ .

Let  $\iota_\Xi : \tilde{\Xi} \rightarrow \tilde{\Xi}$  be the involution on the orientation double cover  $\tilde{\Xi}$  of  $\Xi$  given by the  $\mathbb{Z}/2$ -action. This determines an involution  $\iota_{\mathcal{S}} : \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{S}$ . The induced map

$\iota_{\mathcal{S}}^* : \mathcal{P} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}$  preserves the subspaces  $\mathcal{P}_n$  and commutes with the coboundary  $\delta$ , hence it descends to an induced involution  $\iota_{\mathcal{S}}^* : H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{R})$  which preserves the  $F_n$  and induces a map  $\bar{\iota}^* : H_{dyn}^1 \rightarrow H_{dyn}^1$ .

**Definition 5.2.** We define the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on  $H_{dyn}^1$  as the composition of the involution  $\bar{\iota}^*$  induced by the  $\mathbb{Z}/2$ -action on  $\tilde{\Xi}$  and the action by  $(-1)^p$  on  $\mathbb{R}(p)$ .

Consider then the  $\mathbb{R}$ -vector space  $\mathcal{K}_N$  generated by all reduced sequences  $a_0 \dots a_N$  in the  $\{g_i\}_{i=1}^{2g}$  with the condition  $a_0 \neq a_N^{-1}$  (Proposition 4.14).

**Definition 5.3.** We define the *dynamical homology*  $H_1^{dyn}$  as

$$H_1^{dyn} := \bigoplus_{p \geq 1} gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_1^{dyn}, \tag{5.4}$$

where we set

$$gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_1^{dyn} := \mathcal{K}_{p-1} \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{R}(p) \tag{5.5}$$

for  $\mathbb{R}(p) = (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \mathbb{R}$ . The action of  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on  $H_1^{dyn}$  is given by

$$\bar{F}_\infty((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p a_0 \dots a_{p-1}) = (-1)^p (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p a_{p-1}^{-1} \dots a_0^{-1}. \tag{5.6}$$

**5.2. Hilbert completions**

It is convenient to introduce Hilbert space completions of the vector spaces  $\mathcal{P}$  and  $H_1^{dyn}$ . This will allow us to treat the graded structures and filtrations in terms of orthogonal projections. It will also play an important role later when we consider actions of operator algebras. The Hilbert spaces can be chosen real or complex. When we want to preserve the information given by the twisted coefficients  $\mathbb{R}(p)$ , we can choose to work with real coefficients.

By (4.12), we can describe the cohomology  $H^1(\mathcal{S}_T)$  through the exact sequence

$$0 \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \rightarrow C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\delta=I-T} C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C} \rightarrow H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow 0, \tag{5.7}$$

where  $C(\mathcal{S}, \mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C}$  are the locally constant, complex valued functions on  $\mathcal{S}$ . The same holds with  $\mathbb{R}$  instead of  $\mathbb{C}$  coefficients. By the argument of Theorem 4.12, we can replace in this sequence the space of locally constant functions on  $\mathcal{S}$  by the space  $\mathcal{P}$  of locally constant functions of future coordinates. These can be identified with locally constant functions on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ ,

$$0 \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \rightarrow \mathcal{P} \xrightarrow{\delta} \mathcal{P} \rightarrow H^1(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow 0. \tag{5.8}$$

We can consider the (real) Hilbert space  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$ , of functions of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  that are square integrable with respect to the Patterson–Sullivan measure  $\mu$  ([50]) satisfying

$$(\gamma^* d\mu)(x) = |\gamma'(x)|^{\delta_H} d\mu(x), \quad \forall \gamma \in \Gamma. \tag{5.9}$$

The subspace  $\mathcal{P} \subset L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  is norm dense, hence we will use  $\mathcal{L} = L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  as a Hilbert space completion of  $\mathcal{P}$ .

On the homology  $H_1^{dyn}$  a (real) Hilbert space structure is obtained in the following way. Each summand  $\mathcal{K}_N$  can be regarded as a finite-dimensional linear subspace of the (real) Hilbert space  $\ell^2(\Gamma)$ , by identifying the generators  $a_0 \dots a_N$  with  $a_0 \neq a_N^{-1}$  with a subset of the set of all finite reduced words, which is a complete basis of  $\ell^2(\Gamma)$ . This determines the inner product on each  $\mathcal{K}_N$ . We denote the corresponding norm by  $\|\cdot\|_{\mathcal{K}_N}$ . We obtain a real Hilbert space structure on  $H_1^{dyn}$  with norm

$$\left\| \sum_p x_p \right\| := \left( \sum_p \|x_p\|_{\mathcal{K}_N}^2 \right)^{1/2}. \tag{5.10}$$

We denote the Hilbert space completion of  $H_1^{dyn}$  in this norm by  $\mathcal{H}_1^{dyn}$ .

### 5.3. Arithmetic cohomology and dynamics

We construct a linear subspace  $\mathcal{V}$  of  $\mathcal{P}$  isomorphic to the archimedean cohomology of Section 2, compatible with the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$ .

Let  $\Pi_n$  denote the orthogonal projections onto the subspaces  $\mathcal{P}_n$ , with respect to the inner product on the Hilbert space  $\mathcal{L} = L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$ . We denote by  $\hat{\Pi}_n$  the projections  $\hat{\Pi}_n = \Pi_n - \Pi_{n-1}$  onto the subspaces  $\mathcal{P}_n \cap \mathcal{P}_{n-1}^\perp$ . These determine an associated grading operator, the unbounded self-adjoint operator  $D : \mathcal{L} \rightarrow \mathcal{L}$

$$D = \sum_n n \hat{\Pi}_n. \tag{5.11}$$

Consider again the involution  $\iota_\Xi : \tilde{\Xi} \rightarrow \tilde{\Xi}$  and the induced  $\iota_S : \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{S}$ .

**Definition 5.4.** We define the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  on the space  $\mathcal{P}$  by

$$\bar{F}_\infty = (-1)^D \iota_S. \tag{5.12}$$

This extends to a bounded operator on  $\mathcal{L}$ .

Notice that  $\iota_S \circ \hat{\Pi}_n = \hat{\Pi}_n \circ \iota_S$ , for all  $n \geq 1$ , hence the involution  $\bar{F}_\infty$  commutes with all the projections  $\hat{\Pi}_n$ . Similarly, we have an analog of the Tate twist by  $\mathbb{R}(p)$  on the coefficients of the archimedean cohomology of Section 2, given by the action on  $\mathcal{P}$  of the linear operator  $(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^D$ .

Let  $\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$  denote the characteristic functions of the sets  $\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k}) \subset \mathcal{S}^+$ , where  $w_{n,k}$  is a word in the  $\{g_j\}_{j=1}^{2g}$  of the form

$$w_{n,k} = \underbrace{g_k g_k \cdots g_k}_{n\text{-times}}.$$

**Lemma 5.5.** *The functions  $\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})} \in \mathcal{P}_n$  have the following properties:*

1. *The elements  $\hat{\Pi}_n \chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$  are linearly independent in  $\mathcal{P}_n \cap \mathcal{P}_{n-1}^\perp$ .*
2. *The images under the quotient map*

$$\chi_{n,k} := [\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}] \in \text{Gr}_{n-1} \tag{5.13}$$

*are all linearly independent, hence they span a  $2g$ -dimensional subspace in each  $\text{Gr}_{n-1} \subset H_{dyn}^1$ .*

*Proof.* 1. The characteristic functions  $\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$  for  $n \geq 1$  and  $k = 1, \dots, 2g$  are all linearly independent in  $\mathcal{P}_n$ . Moreover, no linear combination of the  $\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$  lies in  $\mathcal{P}_{n-1}$ .

2. The pairing of Proposition 4.15 with  $T$ -invariant elements  $g_i g_i \dots g_i \dots$  in the dynamical homology shows that no linear combination of the  $\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$  lies in the image of  $\delta = 1 - T$ . Thus, passing to equivalence classes modulo the image of the map  $\delta = 1 - T$ , we obtain linearly independent elements

$$(\chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})} \text{ mod } (1 - T)) \in F_{n-1} \subset H^1(\mathcal{S}_T). \tag{5.14}$$

Again, as in 1, for any fixed  $n$ , no linear combination of the classes (5.14) lies in  $F_{n-2}$ . Thus, by further taking the equivalence classes of the (5.14) modulo  $F_{n-2}$ , we obtain  $2g$  linearly independent elements (5.13) in each  $\text{Gr}_{n-1}$ .  $\square$

We obtain elements in  $H_{dyn}^1$  by considering

$$(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \chi_{-p+1,k} \in gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{dyn}^1. \tag{5.15}$$

**Definition 5.6.** We denote by  $\mathcal{V} \subset \mathcal{P}$  the linear vector space spanned by the elements  $\hat{\Pi}_n \chi_{\mathcal{S}^+(w_{n,k})}$ . This is a graded vector space

$$\mathcal{V} := \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}, \tag{5.16}$$

with  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V} = \hat{\Pi}_{|p|} \mathcal{V}$ . Similarly, we denote by  $\bar{\mathcal{V}} \subset H_{dyn}^1$  the graded subspace

$$\bar{\mathcal{V}} := \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}}$$

where  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}}$  is the subspace of  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{dyn}^1$  spanned by the elements of the form (5.15), for  $k = 1, \dots, 2g$ .

Notice that in (5.16) we have added a sign to the grading ( $p \leq 0$ ) in order to match the sign of the grading of the archimedean cohomology. This means that we have to introduce a sign in the grading operator (5.11). We discuss this more precisely when we introduce the dynamical spectral triple.

Now we show that there is a natural definition of a map from the archimedean cohomology to the space  $\mathcal{V}$  and to the dynamical cohomology. This involves a basis of holomorphic differentials determined by the Schottky uniformization.

For  $k = 1, \dots, g$ , let  $\eta_k$  denote a basis of holomorphic differentials on the Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  satisfying the normalization

$$\int_{a_j} \eta_k = \delta_{jk}, \tag{5.17}$$

where the  $a_k$  are a basis of  $\text{Ker}(I_*)$  for  $I_* : H_1(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow H_1(\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma, \mathbb{Z})$  induced by the inclusion of  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  as the boundary at infinity of the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ . We refer to this basis as the *canonical basis* of holomorphic differentials.

Recall that, since we are considering an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve,  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  has a Schottky uniformization by a Fuchsian Schottky group as in Proposition 3.11. It is known then ([24] [45]) that a holomorphic differential  $\eta$  on  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  can be obtained as Poincaré series with exponent 1,  $\eta = \Theta^1(f)$ , where  $f$  is a meromorphic function on  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  with divisor  $D(f) \subset \Omega_\Gamma$ , and

$$\Theta^m(f)(z) := \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} f(\gamma(z)) \left( \frac{\partial \gamma(z)}{\partial z} \right)^m \tag{5.18}$$

is the Poincaré series with exponent  $m$ . The fact that the Hausdorff dimension of the limit set satisfies  $\dim_H(\Lambda_\Gamma) < 1$  ensures absolute convergence on compact sets in  $\Omega_\Gamma$  (Remark 3.12). In particular, consider the automorphic series

$$\omega_k = \sum_{h \in C(\cdot|g_k)} d_z \log \langle h z^+(g_k), h z^-(g_k), z, z_0 \rangle, \tag{5.19}$$

where  $\langle a, b, c, d \rangle$  is the cross ratio of points in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , and  $C(\cdot|g_k)$  denotes a set of representatives of the coset classes  $\Gamma/\mathbb{Z}\langle g_k \rangle$ , for  $\{g_k\}_{k=1}^g$  the generators of  $\Gamma$ , and  $z_0$  a base point in  $\Omega_\Gamma$ . By Lemma 8.2 of [24] (Proposition 1.5.2 of [28]), the expression (5.19) gives the canonical basis of holomorphic differentials satisfying the normalization condition (5.17), in the form

$$\eta_k = \frac{1}{2\pi\sqrt{-1}} \omega_k, \quad \text{so that} \quad \int_{a_j} \omega_k = (2\pi\sqrt{-1})\delta_{jk}. \tag{5.20}$$

The formula (5.19) gives the explicit correspondence between the set of generators of  $\Gamma$  and the canonical basis of holomorphic differentials  $g_k \mapsto \omega_k$ , for  $k = 1, \dots, g$ , which we use in order to produce the following identification.

**Theorem 5.7.** *Consider the map*

$$U : gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \longrightarrow gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}, \tag{5.21}$$

given by

$$U((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_k) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \hat{\Pi}_{|p|} \frac{\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})} - \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k+g})}}{2} \tag{5.22}$$

$$U((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_{k+g}) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \hat{\Pi}_{|p|} \frac{\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})} + \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k+g})}}{2}, \tag{5.23}$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, g$  and  $p \leq 0$ , where we set

$$\varphi_k = (\omega_k + \bar{\omega}_k)/2 \quad \text{and} \quad \varphi_{g+k} = -i(\omega_k - \bar{\omega}_k)/2. \tag{5.24}$$

Consider also the map

$$\bar{U} : gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \longrightarrow gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}}, \tag{5.25}$$

given by

$$\bar{U}((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1}\varphi_k) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{\chi_{-p+1,k} - \chi_{-p+1,k+g}}{2} \tag{5.26}$$

$$\bar{U}((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1}\varphi_{k+g}) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{\chi_{-p+1,k} + \chi_{-p+1,k+g}}{2}. \tag{5.27}$$

The map  $U$  is an isomorphism of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  and  $\mathcal{V} \subset \mathcal{P}$ . It is equivariant with respect to the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$ . The Tate twist that gives the grading of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  corresponds to the action of  $(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-D}$ , for  $D$  in (5.11), on  $\mathcal{V}$ . The map  $\bar{U}$  is an isomorphism of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  and  $\bar{\mathcal{V}}$  as graded vector spaces, which is equivariant with respect to the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$ .

*Proof.* The elements (5.24) give a basis of  $H_{DR}^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(1))$ , where the twist is due to the choice of normalization (5.17) and the relation (5.20). A basis for  $H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p))$  is then given by the  $(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1}\varphi_k$ ,  $k = 1, \dots, 2g$ .

By (2.26), we have  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = \bigoplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ , with  $gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p))$ . Thus, we obtain a basis for  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ , of the form

$$\{(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1}\varphi_k : k = 1, \dots, 2g, p \leq 0\}.$$

By construction, the maps (5.21) and (5.25) define isomorphisms of graded vector spaces. We need to check that they are equivariant with respect to the action of the real Frobenius.

In the case of a real  $X/\mathbb{R}$ , the action of complex conjugation  $z \mapsto \bar{z}$  corresponds geometrically to a change of orientation on  $X/\mathbb{R}$ , which induces a change of orientation on the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ . If  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  is the geodesic in  $\tilde{\Xi}$  such that the orientation of the geodesic at the endpoint  $b \in \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  agrees with the outward pointing normal vector, then under the change of orientation induced by  $z \mapsto \bar{z}$  the geodesic  $L_{\{a,b\}}$  is exchanged with  $L_{\{b,a\}}$ , which is exactly the effect of the involution on  $\tilde{\Xi}$ . The induced involution on  $\mathcal{P}$  exchanges  $\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})}$  and  $\chi_{S^+(w_{n,g+k})}$ . Since we have  $\bar{F}_\infty \hat{\Pi}_n = \hat{\Pi}_n \bar{F}_\infty$ , we obtain

$$\bar{F}_\infty((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \hat{\Pi}_{|p|} \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})}) = (-1)^p (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \hat{\Pi}_{|p|} \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k+g})}.$$

Similarly, the involution on  $\bar{\mathcal{V}}$  is given by

$$\bar{F}_\infty((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \chi_{-p+1,k}) = (-1)^p (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \chi_{-p+1,g+k}.$$

On the other hand, under the action of the real Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  we have  $H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}) = E_1 \oplus E_{-1}$  with  $\dim E_{\pm 1} = g$  (Remark 2.17), generated respectively by the

$(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-1}\varphi_k$  and  $(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-1}\varphi_{g+k}$ , for  $k = 1, \dots, g$ . This gives the corresponding splitting into eigenspaces  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} = E^+ \oplus E^-$  as in (2.35). Thus, we see that (5.22) and (5.23) and (5.26) and (5.27) are  $\bar{F}_\infty$ -equivariant, since we have

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{F}_\infty \left( (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{1}{2} (\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})} \pm \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k+g})}) \right) &= \pm 1 \cdot (-1)^p \cdot \\ &\quad (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{1}{2} (\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})} \pm \chi_{S^+(w_{n,k+g})}) \\ \bar{F}_\infty \left( (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{1}{2} (\chi_{-p+1,k} \pm \chi_{-p+1,k+g}) \right) &= \pm 1 \cdot (-1)^p \cdot \\ &\quad (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{1}{2} (\chi_{-p+1,k} \pm \chi_{-p+1,k+g}) \\ \bar{F}_\infty \left( (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_k \right) &= +1 \cdot (-1)^{p-1} (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_k \\ \bar{F}_\infty \left( (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_{k+g} \right) &= -1 \cdot (-1)^{p-1} (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_{k+g}. \end{aligned}$$

□

**Remark 5.8.** The characteristic function  $\chi_{S^+(w_{n,k})}$  can be regarded as the “best approximation” within  $\mathcal{P}_n$  (Theorem 4.12.2) to a function (noncontinuous) supported on the periodic sequence of period  $g_k$ ,

$$f(g_k g_k g_k g_k \dots) = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad f(a_0 a_1 a_2 a_3 \dots) = 0 \quad \text{otherwise.}$$

In fact, the grading by  $n$  should be regarded as the choice of a *cutoff* on the cohomology  $\mathcal{H}^1$ , corresponding to the choice of a “mesh” on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ . The periodic sequence  $g_k g_k g_k g_k g_k \dots$  represents under the correspondence of Lemma 4.8 the closed geodesic in  $\bar{\Xi}$  that is an oriented core handle of the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ . Thus, the elements (5.15) that span the subspace  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}} \subset gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{dyn}^1$  can be regarded as the “best approximations” within  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma H_{dyn}^1$  to cohomology classes supported on the core handles of the handlebody. In other words, we may regard the index  $p \leq 0$  in the graded structure  $\mathcal{V} = \oplus_p gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}$  as measuring a way of “zooming in”, with increasing precision for larger  $|p|$ , on the core handles of the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ .

Notice that, while the archimedean cohomology  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  is identified with the *kernel* of the monodromy map, the dynamical cohomology is constructed by considering the *cokernel* of the map  $\delta = 1 - T$ . This suggests a duality between the monodromy  $N$  and the map  $1 - T$ . This will be made more precise in the next paragraph.

**5.4. Duality isomorphisms**

We identify a copy of the dual of the archimedean cohomology inside the dynamical homology  $H_1^{dyn}$ .

**Definition 5.9.** We define the linear subspace  $\mathcal{W} \subset H_1^{dyn}$  to be the graded vector  $\mathcal{W} = \oplus_{p \geq 1} gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}$ , where  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}$  is generated by the  $2g$  elements

$$(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \underbrace{g_k g_k \dots g_k}_{p\text{-times}}$$

**Remark 5.10.** Notice that the generators of  $H_1^{dyn}$  are periodic sequences  $\overline{a_0 \dots a_N}$ , hence elements in  $\text{Ker}(1 - T^d)$  for  $d$  the period length,  $d|N$ . Notice in particular that the subspace  $\mathcal{W}$  can be identified with the part of  $H_1^{dyn}$  that is generated by elements in  $\text{Ker}(1 - T)$ , i.e. , periodic sequences with period length  $d = 1$ .

The subspace  $\mathcal{W}$  of the dynamical homology is related both to the subspace  $\bar{\mathcal{V}}$  of the dynamical cohomology and to the space

$$\oplus_{r \geq 2} gr_{2r}^w H_Y^3(X) \cong \delta_1(\oplus_{p \leq 0} gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}),$$

for  $r = -p + 2$ , and with  $\delta_1$  the duality isomorphism of (3.18) (Proposition 2.15).

**Lemma 5.11.** *The homology/cohomology pairing (4.19) induces an identification*

$$\tilde{\delta}_1 : gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}} \xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2(-p+1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W} \tag{5.28}$$

of the vector spaces  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}$  and  $gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}}$ , for all  $p \leq 0$ . The map  $\tilde{\delta}_1$  satisfies  $\tilde{\delta}_1 \circ \bar{F}_\infty + \bar{F}_\infty \circ \tilde{\delta}_1 = 0$ .

*Proof.* The pairing (4.19) of the class of the characteristic function  $\chi_{S^+(w_{-p+1,k})}$  with the element  $\underbrace{g_j g_j \dots g_j}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}}$  is

$$\langle \chi_{S^+(w_{-p+1,k})}, \underbrace{g_j g_j \dots g_j}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \rangle = (-p + 1) \delta_{jk},$$

for  $j, k = 1 \dots 2g$ . This induces a pairing

$$\begin{aligned} \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}} \times gr_{2(-p+1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W} &\rightarrow \mathbb{R}(1) \tag{5.29} \\ \langle (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \chi_{-p+1,k}, (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{(-p+1)} \underbrace{g_j g_j \dots g_j}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \rangle &= (2\pi\sqrt{-1})(-p + 1) \delta_{jk}. \end{aligned}$$

Via this pairing, we obtain an identification

$$\tilde{\delta}_1 : gr_{2p}^\Gamma \bar{\mathcal{V}} \xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2(-p+1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}$$

of the form

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{\delta}_1 &: (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^p \frac{1}{2} (\chi_{-p+1,k} \pm \chi_{-p+1,k+g}) \\ \mapsto & \frac{(2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{(-p+1)}}{(-p+1)} \frac{1}{2} \left( \underbrace{g_k g_k \dots g_k}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \pm \underbrace{g_k^{-1} g_k^{-1} \dots g_k^{-1}}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \right). \end{aligned} \tag{5.30}$$

The relation  $\tilde{\delta}_1 \circ \bar{F}_\infty + \bar{F}_\infty \circ \tilde{\delta}_1 = 0$  follows by construction. □

We then obtain the following result.

**Theorem 5.12.** *For  $p \leq 0$ , consider the map*

$$\tilde{U} : gr_{2(-p+2)}^w H^2(X^*) \longrightarrow gr_{2(-p+1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}, \tag{5.31}$$

given by

$$\tilde{U}((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-p} \varphi_k) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-p+1} \frac{1}{2(-p+1)} \left( \underbrace{g_k \dots g_k}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} - \underbrace{g_k^{-1} \dots g_k^{-1}}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \right) \tag{5.32}$$

$$\tilde{U}((2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-p} \varphi_{k+g}) := (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-p+1} \frac{1}{2(-p+1)} \left( \underbrace{g_k \dots g_k}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} + \underbrace{g_k^{-1} \dots g_k^{-1}}_{(-p+1)\text{-times}} \right), \tag{5.33}$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, g$ , with  $\varphi$  as in (5.24). The map  $\tilde{U}$  is a  $\bar{F}_\infty$ -equivariant isomorphism of the graded vector spaces  $\oplus_{r=-p+2 \geq 2} gr_{2r}^w H^2(X^*)$  and  $\mathcal{W}$ . Moreover, the following diagram commutes and is compatible with the action of  $\bar{F}_\infty$ :

$$\begin{array}{ccc} gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} & \xrightarrow{\delta_1} & gr_{2(-p+2)}^w H^2(X^*) \\ \downarrow \tilde{U} & & \downarrow \tilde{U} \\ gr_{2p}^\Gamma \tilde{\mathcal{V}} & \xrightarrow{\tilde{\delta}_1} & gr_{2(-p+1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W} \end{array} \tag{5.34}$$

*Proof.* We have  $gr_{2(-p+2)}^w H^2(X^*) \cong H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(-p+1))$  by Propositions 2.22 and 2.23. The duality isomorphism (3.18) (Proposition 2.15)

$$\delta_1 : gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0} \xrightarrow{\cong} gr_{2(-p+2)}^w H^2(X^*),$$

is given by

$$\begin{aligned} N^{2p-1} : H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(p)) &\xrightarrow{\cong} H^1(X/\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}(-p+1)), \\ (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{p-1} \varphi_k &\mapsto (2\pi\sqrt{-1})^{-p} \varphi_k. \end{aligned}$$

Notice that the duality isomorphism  $\delta_1$  also satisfies  $\delta_1 \circ \bar{F}_\infty + \bar{F}_\infty \circ \delta_1 = 0$ . The result follows immediately.  $\square$

**Remark 5.13.** There is an intrinsic duality in the identifications of diagram (5.34). In fact, as discussed in Remark 5.10, the space  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  corresponding to  $\text{Ker}(N)$  is identified with  $\mathcal{V}$ , which is obtained by considering the  $\text{Coker}(1 - T)$ , while the image of  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  under the duality isomorphism  $\delta_1$  is obtained by taking the  $\text{Coker}(N)$  in  $\mathbb{H}(X^*)$  and is identified with  $\mathcal{W}$ , which can be identified with  $\text{Ker}(1 - T)$ . Modulo this duality, we have a correspondence between the monodromy map  $N$  and the dynamical map  $1 - T$ . The presence of this duality is not surprising, considering that the cohomological construction of Section 2 is a theory of the special fiber, while the dynamical construction of Section 4 and [24] is a theory of the *dual* graph.

## 6. Dynamical spectral triple

In Proposition 6.5 and Theorem 6.6 we construct a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  associated to the dual graph  $\mathcal{S}_T$ , where the Hilbert space is given by the cochains of the dynamical cohomology and the algebra is the crossed product  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ , describing the action of the Schottky group on its limit set.

We recall the construction and basic properties of the Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  associated to the shift of finite type  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$ . In Theorem 6.2 we show that this algebra describes, as a noncommutative space, the quotient of the limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  by the action of the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ .

The Dirac operator  $D$ , defined by the grading operator (5.11) and a sign, restricts to the subspace  $\mathcal{V}$  isomorphic to the archimedean cohomology  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  to the Frobenius-type operator  $\Phi$  of Section 2. This ensures that we can recover the local factor at arithmetic infinity from the spectral geometry. We refer to these data as *dynamical spectral triple*.

We then show, in §7, that the homotopy quotient  $\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \mathbb{H}^3$  provides an analog, in the  $\infty$ -adic case, of the  $p$ -adic reduction map obtained by considering the reductions mod  $p^k$  ([24] [33]).

### 6.1. Cuntz–Krieger algebra

A partial isometry is a linear operator  $S$  satisfying the relation  $S = SS^*S$ . The Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  ([17] [18]) is defined as the universal  $C^*$ -algebra generated by partial isometries  $S_1, \dots, S_{2g}$ , satisfying the relations

$$\sum_j S_j S_j^* = I \tag{6.1}$$

$$S_i^* S_i = \sum_j A_{ij} S_j S_j^*, \tag{6.2}$$

where  $A = (A_{ij})$  is the  $2g \times 2g$  transition matrix of the subshift of finite type  $(S, T)$ , namely the matrix whose entries are  $A_{ij} = 1$  whenever  $|i - j| \neq g$ , and  $A_{ij} = 0$  otherwise.

We give a more explicit description of the generators of the Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$ .

Consider the following operators, acting on the Hilbert space  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$ , where  $\mu$  is the Patterson–Sullivan measure on the limit set ([50]):

$$(T_{\gamma^{-1}} f)(x) := |\gamma'(x)|^{\delta_H/2} f(\gamma x), \quad \text{and} \quad (P_\gamma f)(x) := \chi_\gamma(x) f(x), \tag{6.3}$$

where  $\delta_H$  is the Hausdorff dimension of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  and the element  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  is identified with a reduced word in the generators  $\{g_j\}_{j=1}^g$  and their inverses, and  $\chi_\gamma$  is the characteristic function of the cylinder  $\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma)$  of all (right) infinite reduced words that begin with the word  $\gamma$ . Then, for all  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ ,  $T_\gamma$  is a unitary operator with  $T_\gamma^* = T_{\gamma^{-1}}$  and  $P_\gamma$  is a projector. In particular, with the usual notation  $g_{j+g} = g_j^{-1}$ , for  $j = 1, \dots, g$ , we write

$$T_j := T_{g_j} \quad \text{and} \quad P_j := P_{g_j} \quad \text{for } j = 1, \dots, 2g.$$

**Proposition 6.1.** *The operators*

$$S_i := \sum_j A_{ij} T_i^* P_j \tag{6.4}$$

are bounded operators on  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  satisfying the relations (6.1) and (6.2). Thus, the Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  can be identified with the subalgebra of bounded operators on the Hilbert space  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  generated by the  $S_i$  as in (6.4).

*Proof.* The operators  $P_i$  are orthogonal projectors, i.e.  $P_i P_j = \delta_{ij} P_j$ . The composite  $T_i^* P_j T_i$  satisfies

$$\sum_j A_{ij} (T_i^* P_j T_i f)(x) = \begin{cases} f(x) & \text{if } P_i(x) = x \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

In fact, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_j A_{ij} (T_i^* P_j T_i f)(x) &= \sum_j A_{ij} T_i^* P_j |g'_i(g_i^{-1}x)|^{-\delta_H/2} f(g_i^{-1}x) \\ &= \begin{cases} \sum_j A_{ij} T_i^* P_j |g'_i(Tx)|^{-\delta_H/2} f(Tx) = f(x) & a_0 = g_i \\ 0 & a_0 \neq g_i. \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

This implies that the  $S_i$  and  $S_i^*$  satisfy

$$S_i S_i^* = \sum_j A_{ij} T_i^* P_j T_i = P_i.$$

Since the projectors  $P_i$  satisfy  $\sum_i P_i = I$ , we obtain the relation (6.1). Moreover, since  $T_i T_i^* = 1$ , and the entries  $A_{ij}$  are all zeroes and ones, we also obtain

$$S_i^* S_i = \sum_{j,k} A_{ij} A_{ik} P_k T_i T_i^* P_j = \sum_j (A_{ij})^2 P_j = \sum_j A_{ij} P_j.$$

Replacing  $P_j = S_j S_j^*$  from (6.1) we then obtain (6.2). □

The Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  can be described in terms of the action of the free group  $\Gamma$  on its limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  (cf. [41], [47]), so that we can regard  $\mathcal{O}_A$  as a noncommutative space replacing the classical quotient  $\Lambda_\Gamma/\Gamma$ .

In fact (Lemma 4.4), the action of  $\Gamma$  on  $\Lambda_\Gamma \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  determines a unitary representation

$$\Gamma \rightarrow \text{Aut}(C(\Lambda_\Gamma)) \quad (T_{\gamma^{-1}} f)(x) = |\gamma'(x)|^{\delta_H/2} f(\gamma x), \tag{6.5}$$

where  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  is the  $C^*$ -algebra of continuous functions on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ . Thus, we can form the (reduced) crossed product  $C^*$ -algebra  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ .

In the following theorem we construct an explicit identification between the algebra  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$  and the subalgebra of bounded operators on  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  generated by the  $S_i$ , which is isomorphic to  $\mathcal{O}_A$ .

**Theorem 6.2.** *The Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  satisfies the following properties.*

1. *There is an injection  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_A$  which identifies  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  with the maximal commutative subalgebra of  $\mathcal{O}_A$  generated by the  $P_\gamma$  as in (6.3).*
2. *The generators  $S_i$  of  $\mathcal{O}_A$  given in (6.4) realize  $\mathcal{O}_A$  as a subalgebra of  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ .*
3. *The operators  $T_\gamma$  of (6.3) are elements in  $\mathcal{O}_A$ , hence the injection of  $\mathcal{O}_A$  inside  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$  is an isomorphism,*

$$\mathcal{O}_A \cong C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma. \tag{6.6}$$

*Proof.* 1. The algebra  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  acts on  $L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  as multiplication operators. We identify the characteristic function  $\chi_{\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma)}$  of the subset  $\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma) \subset \Lambda_\Gamma$  with the projector  $P_\gamma$  defined in (6.3). A direct calculation shows that, for any  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ , the projector  $P_\gamma$  satisfies  $P_\gamma = S_{i_1} \cdots S_{i_k} S_{i_k}^* \cdots S_{i_1}^*$ , for  $\gamma = g_{i_1} \cdots g_{i_k}$ , hence it is in the algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$ .

For a multi-index  $\mu = \{i_1, \dots, i_k\}$ , the range projection  $P_\mu$  is the element  $P_\mu = S_\mu S_\mu^*$  in  $\mathcal{O}_A$ . We have identified  $\chi_{\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma)}$  in  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  with the range projection  $P_\mu$ , for  $\mu = \{i_1, \dots, i_k\}$  the multi-index of  $\gamma = g_{i_1} \cdots g_{i_k}$ . Thus, we have identified  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  with the maximal commutative subalgebra of  $\mathcal{O}_A$  generated by the range projections ([17] [18]).

2. The operators  $S_i$  defined in (6.4) determine elements in  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ , by identifying the projectors  $P_j$  with  $\chi_{\Lambda_\Gamma(g_j)}$  as in (1), and the operators  $T_i$  with the corresponding elements in the unitary representation (6.5). These elements

still satisfy the relations (6.1) (6.2), hence the algebra generated by the  $S_i$  can be regarded as a subalgebra of  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ .

3. Given 1 and 2, in order to prove the isomorphism (6.6), it is enough to show that, for any  $\gamma \in \Gamma$ , the operators  $T_\gamma$  in the unitary representation (6.5) are in the subalgebra of  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$  generated by the  $S_i$ . In fact, since this subalgebra contains  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$ , if we know it also contains the  $T_\gamma$ , it has to be the whole of  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ . Again this follows by a direct calculation:  $T_\gamma = T_{i_1} \cdots T_{i_k}$  and  $T_i = S_{g+i} + S_i^*$ , with  $g_{g+i} = g_i^{-1}$ , since

$$T_i f(x) = |g'_i(g_i^{-1}x)|^{-\delta_H/2} f(g_i^{-1}x),$$

$$S_i f(x) = (1 - \chi_{g_i^{-1}}(x)) |g'_i(x)|^{\delta_H/2} f(g_i x),$$

and

$$S_i^* f(x) = \chi_{g_i}(x) |g'_i(Tx)|^{-\delta_H/2} f(Tx). \quad \square$$

### 6.2. Spectral triple

We construct a spectral triple for the noncommutative space  $\mathcal{O}_A$ . As a Hilbert space, we want to consider a space that contains naturally a copy of the archimedean cohomology  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  and of the  $\text{Coker}(N)$  in  $\mathbb{H}^2(X^*)$ . Instead of realizing these cohomology spaces inside dynamical cohomology and homology as in (5.1), we will work with two copies of the chain complex for the dynamical cohomology, identifying  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$  with a copy of the subspace  $\mathcal{V}$  and the  $\text{Coker}(N)$  in  $\mathbb{H}^2(X^*)$  with the other copy of  $\mathcal{V}$ , via the duality isomorphism  $\delta_1$  of Proposition 2.15.

On the Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{L} \oplus \mathcal{L}$ , we consider the unbounded linear operator

$$D|_{\mathcal{L} \oplus 0} = \sum_n (n+1) (\hat{\Pi}_n \oplus 0) \quad D|_{0 \oplus \mathcal{L}} = - \sum_n n (0 \oplus \hat{\Pi}_n). \quad (6.7)$$

**Remark 6.3.** Notice that the shift by +1 in the spectrum of  $D$  on the positive part  $\mathcal{L} \oplus 0$  takes into account the shift by one in the grading between dynamical homology and cohomology, as in (5.28). This reflects, in turn, the shift by one in grading introduced by the duality isomorphism (3.18) between the cohomology of kernel and cokernel of the monodromy map in the cohomology of the cone, see Proposition 2.15. This shift introduces a spectral asymmetry in the Dirac operator (6.7), hence a nontrivial eta invariant associated to the spectral triple. There is another possible natural choice of the sign for the Dirac operator  $D$  on  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{L} \oplus \mathcal{L}$ , instead of the one in (6.7). Namely, one can define the sign of  $D$  using the duality isomorphism  $\delta_1$  of (3.18), instead of using the sign of the operator  $\Phi$  on the archimedean cohomology and its dual. With this other choice, the sign would be given by the operator that permutes the two copies of  $\mathcal{L}$  in  $\mathcal{H}$ . The choice of sign determined by  $\Phi$ , as in (6.7), gives rise to a spectral triple that is degenerate

as a  $K$ -homology class, hence, in this respect, using the sign induced by the duality  $\delta_1$  may be preferable.

The operator  $D$  of (6.7) has the following properties:

**Proposition 6.4.** *Consider the data  $(\mathcal{H}, D)$  as in (6.7). The operator  $D$  is self-adjoint. Moreover, for all  $\lambda \notin \mathbb{R}$ , the resolvent  $R_\lambda(D) := (D - \lambda)^{-1}$  is a compact operator on  $\mathcal{H}$ . The restriction of the operator  $D$  to  $\mathcal{V} \oplus \mathcal{V} \subset \mathcal{H}$  agrees with the Frobenius-type operator  $\Phi$  of (3.17):*

$$U \Phi|_{gr_{2p}^w H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}} U^{-1} = D|_{0 \oplus gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}} \quad p \leq 0$$

$$U \delta_1^{-1} \Phi|_{gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*)} \delta_1 U^{-1} = D|_{gr_{2(-p+2)}^\Gamma \mathcal{V} \oplus 0} \quad p \geq 2,$$

with the map  $U$  of (5.21) of Theorem 5.12, and  $\delta_1$  the duality isomorphism of (3.18).

*Proof.* The operator  $D$  of (6.7) is already given in diagonal form and is clearly symmetric with respect to the inner product of  $\mathcal{H}$ , hence it is self-adjoint on the domain  $\text{dom}(D) = \{X \in \mathcal{H} : DX \in \mathcal{H}\}$ . For  $\lambda \notin \text{Spec}(D)$ , the operators  $R_\lambda(D)$  are bounded, and related by the resolvent equation

$$R_\lambda(D) - R_{\lambda'}(D) = (\lambda' - \lambda)R_\lambda(D)R_{\lambda'}(D).$$

This implies that if  $R_\lambda(D)$  is compact for one  $\lambda \notin \text{Spec}(D)$ , then all the other  $R_{\lambda'}(D)$ ,  $\lambda' \notin \text{Spec}(D)$  are also compact. In our case we have  $\text{Spec}(D) = \mathbb{Z}$ , with finite multiplicities, hence, for instance,  $R_{1/2}(D)$  is a compact operator with spectrum  $\{(n + 1/2)^{-1} : n \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{0\}$ . The multiplicities grow exponentially, as shown in §4.3, namely the eigenspaces of  $D$  have dimensions  $\dim E_{n+1} = 2g(2g - 1)^{n-1}(2g - 2)$  for  $n \geq 1$ ,  $\dim E_n = 2g(2g - 1)^{-n-1}(2g - 2)$ , for  $n \leq -1$  and  $\dim E_0 = 2g$ . Thus, the Dirac operator will not be finitely summable on  $\mathcal{H}$ , while the restriction of  $D$  to  $\mathcal{V} \oplus \mathcal{V}$  has constant multiplicities. Furthermore, it is clear that the restriction of  $D$  to  $\mathcal{V}$  agrees with the restriction of  $\Phi$  to  $H^1(\tilde{X}^*)^{N=0}$ . On the other hand, recall that the operator  $\Phi$  defined as in (3.17) acts on  $gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*)$ , for  $p \geq 2$ , as multiplication by  $p - 1$ . The map  $\tilde{U}$  of (5.31) identifies  $gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*)$  with  $gr_{2(p-1)}^\Gamma \mathcal{W}$ . Theorem 5.12 shows that we get

$$U \delta_1^{-1} \Phi|_{gr_{2p}^w H^2(X^*)} \delta_1 U^{-1} = D|_{gr_{2(-p+2)}^\Gamma \mathcal{V} \oplus 0}.$$

□

We also consider the diagonal action of the algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  on  $\mathcal{H}$ , via the representation (6.3),

$$\rho : \mathcal{O}_A \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H}). \tag{6.8}$$

The operator  $D$  and the algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  satisfy the following compatibility condition.

**Proposition 6.5.** *Assume that the Hausdorff dimension of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  is  $\delta_H < 1$ . Then the set of elements  $a \in \mathcal{O}_A$  for which the commutator  $[D, \rho(a)]$  is a bounded operator on  $\mathcal{H}$  is norm dense in  $\mathcal{O}_A$ .*

*Proof.* In addition to the operators  $S_i$ , we consider, for  $k \geq 0$ , operators of the form

$$(S_{i,k}f)(x) = h_{i,k}^+(x) (1 - \chi_{g_i^{-1}})(x) f(g_i x), \tag{6.9}$$

and

$$(\hat{S}_{i,k}f)(x) = h_{i,k}^-(Tx) \chi_{g_i}(x) f(Tx), \tag{6.10}$$

where  $h_{i,k}^\pm \in \mathcal{P}_k$  is the function

$$h_{i,k}^\pm(x) = \Pi_k \left( |g'_i(x)|^{\pm\delta_H/2} \right). \tag{6.11}$$

Notice that these operators satisfy

$$S_{i,k} : \mathcal{P}_{n+1} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_n \quad \forall n \geq k. \tag{6.12}$$

$$\hat{S}_{i,k} : \mathcal{P}_n \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{n+1} \quad \forall n \geq k. \tag{6.13}$$

Moreover, the operators  $S_{i,k}^*$  and  $\hat{S}_{i,k}^*$  satisfy

$$S_{i,k}^* : \mathcal{P}_n^\perp \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{n+1}^\perp \quad \forall n \geq k, \tag{6.14}$$

$$\hat{S}_{i,k}^* : \mathcal{P}_{n+1}^\perp \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_n^\perp \quad \forall n \geq k. \tag{6.15}$$

We want to estimate the commutator  $[D, S_i]$ . We have

$$[D, S_i] = \sum_k k [\Pi_k, S_i] - \sum_k k [\Pi_{k-1}, S_i] = -S_i(1 - \Pi_0) + \sum_{k \geq 0} (S_i \Pi_{k+1} - \Pi_k S_i).$$

We can write this in the form

$$-S_i(1 - \Pi_0) + \sum_{k \geq 0} ((S_i - S_{i,k})\Pi_{k+1} - \Pi_k(S_i - S_{i,k})) - \sum_{k \geq 0} \Pi_k S_{i,k} (1 - \Pi_{k+1}),$$

where, in the last term, we have used (6.12). We further write it as

$$-S_i(1 - \Pi_0) + \sum_{k \geq 0} ((S_i - S_{i,k})\Pi_{k+1} - \Pi_k(S_i - S_{i,k})) - \sum_{k \geq 0} \Pi_k (S_{i,k} - \hat{S}_{i,k}^*) (1 - \Pi_{k+1}),$$

using (6.13). This means that we can estimate the first sum in terms of the series

$$\sum_{k \geq 0} \|S_i - S_{i,k}\|, \tag{6.16}$$

and the second sum in terms of the series

$$\sum_{k \geq 0} \|S_{i,k} - \hat{S}_{i,k}^*\|. \tag{6.17}$$

That is, if (6.16) and (6.17) converge, then the commutator  $[D, S_i]$  is bounded in the operator norm, with a bound given in terms of the sum of the series (6.16) and (6.17). The series (6.16) can be estimated in terms of the series

$$\sum_{k \geq 0} \left\| |g'_i|^{\delta_H/2} - h_{i,k}^+ \right\|_{\infty}. \tag{6.18}$$

For  $\gamma = a_0 \dots a_k$  and  $f \in \mathcal{L}$ , we have

$$(\Pi_k f)(\gamma) = \frac{1}{\text{Vol}(\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma))} \int_{\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)} f(x) d\mu(x),$$

where  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)$  is the set  $\mathcal{S}^+(a_0 \dots a_k)$  of irreducible (half) infinite words that start with  $\gamma$ . Thus, we can estimate (6.18) by the series

$$\sum_k \sup_{\gamma \in \Gamma, |\gamma|=k} \sup_{x, y \in \Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)} \left| |g'_i|^{\delta_H/2}(x) - |g'_i|^{\delta_H/2}(y) \right|. \tag{6.19}$$

If the generator  $g_i$  of  $\Gamma$  is represented by a matrix

$$g_i = \begin{pmatrix} a_i & b_i \\ c_i & d_i \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{C}),$$

then

$$|g'_i(x)|^{\delta_H/2} = |c_i x + d_i|^{-\delta_H}.$$

Since for a Schottky group  $\Gamma$  the limit set  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}$  is always strictly contained in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , we can assume, without loss of generality, that in fact  $\Lambda_{\Gamma} \subset \mathbb{C}$ . Since  $\infty \notin \Lambda_{\Gamma}$ , the  $|g'_i|$  have no poles on  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}$ . Then the functions  $|g'_i|$  are Lipschitz functions on  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}$ , satisfying an estimate

$$\left| |g'_i|^{\delta_H/2}(x) - |g'_i|^{\delta_H/2}(y) \right| \leq C_i |x - y|, \tag{6.20}$$

for some constant  $C_i > 0$ . Thus, we can estimate (6.19) in terms of the series

$$\sum_k \sup_{|\gamma|=k} \text{diam}(\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)). \tag{6.21}$$

Since  $\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma) = \gamma(\Lambda_{\Gamma} \setminus \Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma^{-1}))$ , and

$$\frac{a_{\gamma}x + b_{\gamma}}{c_{\gamma}x + d_{\gamma}} - \frac{a_{\gamma}y + b_{\gamma}}{c_{\gamma}y + d_{\gamma}} = \frac{x - y}{(c_{\gamma}x + d_{\gamma})(c_{\gamma}y + d_{\gamma})},$$

for

$$\gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a_{\gamma} & b_{\gamma} \\ c_{\gamma} & d_{\gamma} \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{C}),$$

we can estimate, for  $\gamma x, \gamma y \in \Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)$ ,

$$|\gamma x - \gamma y| \leq \text{diam}(\Lambda_{\Gamma}) |\gamma'(x)|^{1/2} |\gamma'(y)|^{1/2}. \tag{6.22}$$

We can then give a very crude estimate of the series (6.21) in terms of the series

$$\sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \text{diam}(\Lambda_{\Gamma}(\gamma)). \tag{6.23}$$

Notice that (6.21) in fact has a much better convergence than (6.23), by an exponential factor.

By (6.22) we can then estimate the series (6.23) in terms of the Poincaré series of the Schottky group

$$\sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} |\gamma'|^s, \quad s = 1 > \delta_H. \tag{6.24}$$

It is known ([7]) that the Poincaré series (6.24) converges absolutely for all  $s > \delta_H$ . Thus, we obtain that the series (6.16) and (6.17) converge and the commutator  $[D, S_i]$  is bounded.

The series (6.17) can be estimated in a similar way, in terms of the series

$$\sum_k \|h_{i,k}^+ - |g_i|^{\delta_H} h_{i,k}^-\|_{\infty},$$

which can be dealt with by the same argument.

A completely analogous argument also shows that the commutators  $[D, S_i^*]$  are bounded, using the operator  $\hat{S}_{i,k}$  instead of  $S_{i,k}$  and  $S_{i,k}^*$  instead of  $\hat{S}_{i,k}^*$  in the calculation. Thus, we have shown that the dense subalgebra  $\mathcal{O}_A^{alg}$  generated algebraically by the operators  $S_i$  and  $S_i^*$  has bounded commutator with  $D$ .  $\square$

In order to treat also the case  $\delta_H > 1$ , one would need a more delicate estimate of (6.21). For our purposes, the condition on the Hausdorff dimension  $\delta_H < 1$  is sufficiently general, since it is satisfied in the cases we are interested in, namely for an archimedean prime that is a real embedding, with  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve, see Proposition 3.11 and Remark 3.12.

We can then construct the “dynamical spectral triple” at arithmetic infinity as follows:

**Theorem 6.6.** *For  $\delta_H = \dim_H(\Lambda_{\Gamma}) < 1$ , the data  $(\mathcal{O}_A, \mathcal{H}, D)$  form a spectral triple.*

*Proof.* By Proposition 6.4 we know that  $D$  is self adjoint and  $(1 + D^2)^{-1/2}$  is compact. Proposition 6.5 then provides the required compatibility between the Dirac operator  $D$  and the algebra.  $\square$

**Remark 6.7.** The dynamical spectral triple we constructed in Theorem 6.6 is not finitely summable. This is necessarily the case if the Dirac operator has bounded commutator with group elements in  $\Gamma$ , since a result of Connes [11] shows that

nonamenable discrete groups (as is the case for the Schottky group  $\Gamma$ ) do not admit finitely summable spectral triples. However, it is shown in [17], [18], and [37] that the Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$  also admits a second description as a crossed product algebra. Namely, up to stabilization (i.e., tensoring with compact operators) we have

$$\mathcal{O}_A \simeq \mathcal{F}_A \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}, \tag{6.25}$$

where  $\mathcal{F}_A$  is an approximately finite dimensional (AF) algebra stably isomorphic to the groupoid C\*-algebra  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^u)$  of Remark 4.7. It can be shown that the shift operator  $T$  induces an action by automorphisms on  $\mathcal{F}_A$ , so that the crossed product algebra (6.25) corresponds to  $C^*(\mathcal{G}^u) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  associated to the Smale space  $(\mathcal{S}, T)$ . (see Remark 4.7). This means that, again by Connes’ result on hyperfiniteness ([11]), it may be possible to construct a finitely summable spectral triple using the description (6.25) of the algebra. It is an interesting question whether the construction of a finitely summable triple can be carried out in a way that is of arithmetic significance.

### 6.3. Archimedean factors from dynamics

The dynamical spectral triple we constructed in Theorem 6.6 is not finitely summable. However, it is still possible to recover from these data the local factor at arithmetic infinity.

As in the previous sections, we consider a fixed archimedean prime given by a real embedding  $\alpha : \mathbb{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}$ , such that the corresponding Riemann surface  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  is an orthosymmetric smooth real algebraic curve of genus  $g \geq 2$ . The dynamical spectral triple provides another interpretation of the archimedean factor  $L_{\mathbb{R}}(H^1(X_{/\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{R}), s) = \Gamma_{\mathbb{C}}(s)^g$ .

**Proposition 6.8.** *Consider the zeta functions*

$$\zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}), D}(s, z) := \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(D)} \text{Tr}(\pi(\mathcal{V})\Pi(\lambda, D)) (s - \lambda)^{-z}, \tag{6.26}$$

for  $\pi(\mathcal{V})$  the orthogonal projection on the norm closure of  $0 \oplus \mathcal{V}$  in  $\mathcal{H}$ , and

$$\zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}, \bar{F}_{\infty} = id), D}(s, z) := \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(D)} \text{Tr}(\pi(\mathcal{V}, \bar{F}_{\infty} = id)\Pi(\lambda, D)) (s - \lambda)^{-z}, \tag{6.27}$$

for  $\pi(\mathcal{V}, \bar{F}_{\infty} = id)$  the orthogonal projection on the norm closure of  $0 \oplus \mathcal{V}^{\bar{F}_{\infty} = id}$ . The corresponding regularized determinants satisfy

$$\exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz}\zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}), D/2\pi}(s/2\pi, z)|_{z=0}\right)^{-1} = L_{\mathbb{C}}(H^1(X), s), \tag{6.28}$$

$$\exp\left(-\frac{d}{dz}\zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}, \bar{F}_\infty=id), D/2\pi}(s/2\pi, z)|_{z=0}\right)^{-1} = L_{\mathbb{R}}(H^1(X), s). \tag{6.29}$$

Moreover, the operator  $\pi(\mathcal{V})$  acts as projections in the AF algebra  $\mathcal{F}_A$  compressed by the spectral projections  $\Pi(\lambda, D)$ .

*Proof.* Let  $\mathcal{V}_{even} = \oplus_{p=2k} gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}$  and  $\mathcal{V}_{odd} = \oplus_{p=2k+1} gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}$ . Further, we denote by  $\mathcal{V}_{even}^\pm$  and  $\mathcal{V}_{odd}^\pm$  the  $\pm 1$  eigenspaces of the change of orientation involution. The  $+1$  eigenspace of the Frobenius  $\bar{F}_\infty$  is then given by  $\mathcal{V}_{even}^+ \oplus \mathcal{V}_{odd}^-$ . Let  $\pi(\mathcal{V}_{even}^+)$  and  $\pi(\mathcal{V}_{odd}^-)$  denote the corresponding orthogonal projections.

We then compute explicitly

$$\zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}), D/2\pi}(s/2\pi, z) = \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(D)} \text{Tr}(\pi(\mathcal{V})\Pi(\lambda, D)) (s - \lambda)^{-z} = 2g(2\pi)^z \zeta(s, z)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_{\pi(\mathcal{V}, \bar{F}_\infty=id), D/2\pi}(s/2\pi, z) &= \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(D)} \text{Tr}(\pi(\mathcal{V}_{even}^+)\Pi(\lambda, D)) (s - \lambda)^{-z} \\ &\quad + \sum_{\lambda \in \text{Spec}(D)} \text{Tr}(\pi(\mathcal{V}_{odd}^-)\Pi(\lambda, D)) (s - \lambda)^{-z} \\ &= g\pi^z \zeta(s/2, z) + g\pi^z \zeta((s - 1)/2, z), \end{aligned}$$

so that we obtain the identities (6.28) and (6.29) as in Proposition 2.26.

Consider the operators  $Q_{i,n} = S_i^n S_i^{*n}$  in the Cuntz–Krieger algebra  $\mathcal{O}_A$ . These are projections in  $\mathcal{F}_A$  that act as multiplication by the characteristic function  $\chi_{S^+(w_{n,i})}$ . Thus, the operator  $Q_{|p|} := \sum_i Q_{i,|p|}$  has the property that the compression  $\hat{\Pi}_{|p|} Q_{|p|} \hat{\Pi}_{|p|}$  by the spectral projections of  $D$ , acts as the orthogonal projection onto  $0 \oplus gr_{2p}^\Gamma \mathcal{V}$ .  $\square$

After recovering the archimedean factor, one can ask a more refined question, namely whether it is possible to recover the algebraic curve  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  from the noncommutative data described in this section. One can perhaps relate the crossed product algebra  $\mathcal{F}_A \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  of (6.25) to some geodesic lamination on  $X_{/\mathbb{R}}$  that lifts, under the Schottky uniformization map of Proposition 3.11, to a collection of hyperbolic geodesics in  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$  with ends on  $\Lambda_\Gamma \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$ . This may provide an approach to determining the periods of the curve and also bridge between the two constructions presented in the first and second half of this paper. We hope to return to these ideas in the future.

### 7. Reduction mod $\infty$ and homotopy quotients

In the previous sections we have described the (noncommutative) geometry of the fiber at arithmetic infinity of an arithmetic surface in terms of its dual graph, which

we obtained from two quotient spaces: the spaces

$$\Lambda_\Gamma/\Gamma \quad \text{and} \quad \Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma \simeq \mathcal{S}/\mathbb{Z}, \quad (7.1)$$

with  $\mathbb{Z}$  acting via the invertible shift  $T$ , see §4.2, which we can think of as the sets of vertices and edges of the dual graph. We analyzed their noncommutative geometry in terms of Connes' theory of spectral triples.

Another fundamental construction in noncommutative geometry ([10]) is that of *homotopy quotients*. These are commutative spaces, which provide, up to homotopy, geometric models for the corresponding noncommutative spaces. The noncommutative spaces themselves, as we are going to show in our case, appear as quotient spaces of foliations on the homotopy quotients with contractible leaves.

The crucial point in our setting is that the homotopy quotient for the noncommutative space  $\mathcal{S}/\mathbb{Z}$  is precisely the mapping torus (4.9) which gives the geometric model of the dual graph,

$$\mathcal{S}_T = \mathcal{S} \times_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{R}, \quad (7.2)$$

where the noncommutative space  $\mathcal{S}/\mathbb{Z}$  can be identified with the quotient space of the natural foliation on (7.2) whose generic leaf is contractible (a copy of  $\mathbb{R}$ ). On the other hand, the case of the noncommutative space  $\Lambda_\Gamma/\Gamma$  is also extremely interesting. In fact, in this case the homotopy quotient appears very naturally and it describes what Manin refers to in [24] as the “reduction mod  $\infty$ ”.

We recall briefly how the reduction map works in the non-archimedean setting of Mumford curves ([24] [33]). Let  $\mathfrak{K}$  be a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  and let  $\mathfrak{a}$  be its ring of integers. The correct analog for the archimedean case is obtained by “passing to a limit”, replacing  $\mathfrak{K}$  with its Tate closure in  $\mathbb{C}_p$  ([24] §3.1), however, for our purposes here it is sufficient to illustrate the case of a finite extension.

The role of the hyperbolic space  $\mathbb{H}^3$  in the non-archimedean case is played by the Bruhat–Tits tree  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  with vertices

$$\mathcal{T}_{BT}^0 = \{\mathfrak{a} - \text{lattices of rank 2 in a 2-dim } \mathfrak{K}\text{-space}\} / \mathfrak{K}^*.$$

Vertices in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  have valence  $|\mathbb{P}^1(\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m})|$ , where  $\mathfrak{m}$  is the maximal ideal. Each edge in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  has length  $\log |\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m}|$ . The set of ends of  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  is identified with  $X(\mathfrak{K}) = \mathbb{P}^1(\mathfrak{K})$ . This is the analog of the conformal boundary  $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$  of  $\mathbb{H}^3$ . Geodesics correspond to doubly infinite paths in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  without backtracking.

Fix a vertex  $v_0$  on  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$ . This corresponds to the closed fiber  $X_{\mathfrak{a}} \otimes (\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m})$  for the chosen  $\mathfrak{a}$ -structure  $X_{\mathfrak{a}}$ . Each  $x \in \mathbb{P}^1(\mathfrak{K})$  determines a unique choice of a subgraph  $e(v_0, x)$  in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  with vertices  $(v_0, v_1, v_2, \dots)$  along the half infinite path without backtracking which has end  $x$ . The subgraphs  $e(v_0, x)_k$  with vertices  $(v_0, v_1, \dots, v_k)$  correspond to the reduction mod  $\mathfrak{m}^k$ , namely

$$\{e(v_0, x)_k : x \in X(\mathfrak{K})\} \rightsquigarrow X_{\mathfrak{a}}(\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m}^k).$$

Thus the finite graphs  $e(v_0, x)_k$  represent  $\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m}^k$  points, and the infinite graph  $e(v_0, x)$  represents the reduction of  $x$ .

A Schottky group  $\Gamma$ , in this non-archimedean setting, is a purely loxodromic free discrete subgroup of  $\mathrm{PSL}(2, \mathfrak{K})$  in  $g$  generators. The doubly infinite paths in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$  with ends at the pairs of fixed points  $x^\pm(\gamma)$  of the elements  $\gamma \in \Gamma$  produce a copy of the combinatorial tree  $\mathcal{T}$  of the group  $\Gamma$  in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}$ . This is the analog of regarding  $\mathbb{H}^3$  as the union of the translates of a fundamental domain for the action of the Schottky group, which can be thought of as a “tubular neighborhood” of a copy of the Cayley graph  $\mathcal{T}$  of  $\Gamma$  embedded in  $\mathbb{H}^3$ . The ends of the tree  $\mathcal{T} \subset \mathcal{T}_{BT}$  constitute the limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathfrak{K})$ . The complement  $\Omega_\Gamma = \mathbb{P}^1(\mathfrak{K}) \setminus \Lambda_\Gamma$  gives the uniformization of the Mumford curve  $X(\mathfrak{K}) \simeq \Omega_\Gamma/\Gamma$ . In turn,  $X(\mathfrak{K})$  can be identified with the ends of the quotient graph  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}/\Gamma$ , just as in the archimedean case the Riemann surface is the conformal boundary at infinity of the handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ .

The reduction map is then obtained by considering the half infinite paths  $e(v, x)$  in  $\mathcal{T}_{BT}/\Gamma$  that start at a vertex  $v$  of the finite graph  $\mathcal{T}/\Gamma$  and whose end  $x$  is a point of  $X(\mathfrak{K})$ , while the finite graphs  $e(v, x)_k$  provide the  $\mathfrak{a}/\mathfrak{m}^k$  points.

This suggests that the correct analog of the reduction map in the archimedean case is obtained by considering geodesics in  $\mathbb{H}^3$  with an end on  $\Omega_\Gamma$  and the other on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ , as described in [24]. Arguing as in Lemma 4.9, we see that the set of such geodesics can be identified with the quotient  $\Omega_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma$ . The analog of the finite graphs  $e(v, x)_k$  that define the reductions modulo  $\mathfrak{m}^k$  is then given by the quotient  $\mathbb{H}^3 \times_\Gamma \Lambda_\Gamma$ .

Notice that the quotient space

$$\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \mathbb{H}^3 = \Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \underline{E}\Gamma, \tag{7.3}$$

is precisely the homotopy quotient of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  with respect to the action of  $\Gamma$ , with  $\underline{E}\Gamma = \mathbb{H}^3$  and the classifying space  $\underline{B}\Gamma = \mathbb{H}^3/\Gamma = \mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$ , ([10]). In this case also we find that the noncommutative space  $\Lambda_\Gamma/\Gamma$  is the quotient space of a foliation on the homotopy quotient (7.3) with contractible leaves  $\mathbb{H}^3$ .

The relation between the noncommutative spaces (7.1) and the homotopy quotients (7.2) (7.3) is an instance of a very general and powerful construction, namely the  $\mu$ -map ([3] [10]). In particular, in the case of the noncommutative space  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$ , the  $\mu$ -map

$$\mu : K^{*+1}(\mathcal{S}_T) \cong H^{*+1}(\mathcal{S}_T, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow K_*(C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}) \tag{7.4}$$

is the Thom isomorphism that gives the identification of (4.13), (4.14) and recovers the Pimsner–Voiculescu exact sequence (4.12) as in [9]. The map  $\mu$  of (7.4) assigns to a  $K$ -theory class  $\mathcal{E} \in K^{*+1}(\mathcal{S} \times_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{R})$  the index of the longitudinal Dirac operator  $\not{D}_{\mathcal{E}}$  with coefficients  $\mathcal{E}$ . This index is an element of the  $K$ -theory of the crossed product algebra  $C(\mathcal{S}) \rtimes_T \mathbb{Z}$  and the  $\mu$ -map is an isomorphism. Similarly, in the case of the noncommutative space  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma$ , where we have a foliation on the total space with leaves  $\mathbb{H}^3$ , the  $\mu$ -map

$$\mu : K^{*+1}(\Lambda_\Gamma \times_\Gamma \mathbb{H}^3) \rightarrow K_*(C(\Lambda_\Gamma) \rtimes \Gamma) \tag{7.5}$$

is again given by the index of the longitudinal Dirac operator  $\not{D}_{\mathcal{E}}$  with coefficients  $\mathcal{E} \in K^{*+1}(\Lambda_{\Gamma} \times_{\Gamma} \mathbb{H}^3)$ . In this case the map is an isomorphism because the Baum–Connes conjecture with coefficients holds for the case of  $G = SO_0(3,1)$ , with  $\mathbb{H}^3 = G/K$  and  $\Gamma \subset G$  the Schottky group, see [23].

In particular, analyzing the noncommutative space  $C(\Lambda_{\Gamma}) \rtimes \Gamma$  from the point of view of the theory of spectral triples provides cycles to pair with  $K$ -theory classes constructed geometrically via the  $\mu$ -map.

To complete the analogy with the reduction map in the case of Mumford curves, one should also consider the half infinite paths  $e(v, x)$  corresponding to the geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  parameterized by  $\Lambda_{\Gamma} \times_{\Gamma} \Omega_{\Gamma}$ , in addition to the finite graphs  $e(v, x)_k$  that correspond to the homotopy quotient (7.2). This means that the space that completely describes the “reduction modulo infinity” is a compactification of the homotopy quotient

$$\Lambda_{\Gamma} \times_{\Gamma} (\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_{\Gamma}), \quad (7.6)$$

where  $\overline{E\Gamma} = \mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_{\Gamma}$  corresponds to the compactification of the classifying space  $\underline{B\Gamma} = \mathbb{H}^3/\Gamma = \mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  to  $\overline{B\Gamma} = (\mathbb{H}^3 \cup \Omega_{\Gamma})/\Gamma = \mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma} \cup X_{/\mathbb{C}}$ , obtained by adding the conformal boundary at infinity of the hyperbolic handlebody. This is not the only instance where it is natural to consider compactifications for  $\underline{E\Gamma}$  and the homotopy quotients, see e.g. [52].

## 8. Further structure at arithmetic infinity

We point out some other interesting aspects of the relation we have developed between the two approaches of Manin and Deninger to the theory of the closed fiber at arithmetic infinity. We hope to return to them in future work.

(i) *Solenoids.* The infinite tangle of bounded geodesics in  $\mathfrak{X}_{\Gamma}$  can also be related to generalized solenoids, thus making another connection between Manin’s theory of the closed fiber at infinity and Deninger’s theory of “arithmetic cohomology”, for which the importance of solenoids was stressed in the remarks of §5.8 of [21].

There are various ways in which the classical  $p$ -adic solenoids can be generalized. One standard way of producing more general solenoids is by considering a map  $\phi : C \rightarrow C$ , which is a continuous surjection of a Cantor set  $C$ , and form the quotient space  $(C \times [0, 1])/\sim$  by the identification  $(x, 0) \sim (\phi(x), 1)$ . The resulting space is a generalized solenoid provided it is an *indecomposable* compact connected space, where the indecomposable condition means that the image under the quotient map of any  $D \times [0, 1]$  where  $D$  is a clopen subset of  $C$  is connected if and only if  $D = C$ . It is not hard to check that this condition is satisfied if  $\phi$  is a homeomorphism of a Cantor set that has a dense orbit. Thus, our model for the dual graph of the fiber at arithmetic infinity, given by the mapping torus  $\mathcal{S}_T$ , is a generalized solenoid. This can also be related to generalized solenoids for subshifts of finite type [54].

(ii) *Dynamical zeta function.* The action of the shift operator  $T$  on the limit set  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  provides a dynamical zeta function on the special fiber at arithmetic infinity, in terms of the Perron–Frobenius theory for the shift  $T$ , with the Ruelle transfer operator (8.1).

$$(\mathcal{R}_{-sf}g)(z) := \sum_{y:Ty=z} e^{-sf(y)}g(y), \tag{8.1}$$

depending on a parameter  $s \in \mathbb{C}$  and with the function  $f(z) = \log |T'(z)|$ . This is the analog of the Gauss–Kuzmin operator studied in [29] [30] in the case of modular curves. In fact, for  $s = \delta_H$ , the Hausdorff dimension of the limit set, the operator  $\mathcal{R} := \mathcal{R}_{-\delta_H f}$ , with  $f(z) = \log |T'(z)|$  is the Perron–Frobenius operator of  $T$ , that is, the adjoint of composition with  $T$ ,

$$\int_{\Lambda_\Gamma} h(x)\mathcal{R}f(x) d\mu(x) = \int_{\Lambda_\Gamma} h(Tx) f(x) d\mu(x), \tag{8.2}$$

for all  $h, f \in L^2(\Lambda_\Gamma, \mu)$  and  $\mu$  the Patterson–Sullivan measure (5.9). In fact,

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\Lambda_\Gamma} h(Tx) f(x) d\mu(x) &= \sum_i \int_{\Lambda_\Gamma(g_i^{-1})} h(g_i x) f(x) d\mu(x) \\ &= \sum_i \int_{\Lambda_\Gamma} h(g_i x) \chi_{g_i^{-1}}(x) f(x) d\mu(x), \end{aligned}$$

where  $\chi_\gamma(x)$  is the characteristic function of the cylinder  $\Lambda_\Gamma(\gamma)$  of all (right) infinite reduced words that begin with the word  $\gamma$ . This then gives

$$= \int_{\Lambda_\Gamma} h(x) \sum_i A_{ij} \chi_{g_i^{-1}}(x) f(g_i^{-1}(x)) |g'_i(g_i^{-1}(x))|^{-\delta_H} d\mu(x),$$

where the sum is over all admissible  $i$ 's, namely such that  $g_i \neq g_j$ , where  $x = g_j a_1 \dots a_n \dots$ .

The operator  $\mathcal{R}$  encodes important information on the dynamics of  $T$ . In fact, there exists a Banach space  $(\mathbb{V}, \|\cdot\|_{\mathbb{V}})$  of functions on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  with the properties that  $\|f\|_\infty \leq \|f\|_{\mathbb{V}}$  for all  $f \in \mathbb{V}$ , and  $\mathbb{V} \cap C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$  is dense in  $C(\Lambda_\Gamma)$ . On this space  $\mathcal{R}$  is bounded with spectral radius  $r(\mathcal{R}) = 1$ . The point  $\lambda = 1$  is a simple eigenvalue, with (normalized) eigenfunction the density of the unique  $T$ -invariant measure on  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ .

Similarly, for  $\mathcal{B}_q$  a function space of  $q$ -forms on  $\mathcal{U} \subset \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ , with  $\mathcal{U} = \cup_i D_i^\pm$ , with analytic coefficients and uniformly bounded, we denote by  $\mathcal{R}_s^{(q)}$  the operator (8.1) acting on  $\mathcal{B}_q$ . In the case  $q = 0$ , for  $s = \delta_H$  the Hausdorff dimension of  $\Lambda_\Gamma$ , the operator  $\mathcal{R}_{\delta_H}^{(0)}$  has top eigenvalue 1. This is a simple eigenvalue, with a nonnegative eigenfunction which is the density of the invariant measure. The analysis is similar to the case described in [29]. For  $\text{Re}(s) \gg 0$  the operators  $\mathcal{R}_s^{(q)}$  are nuclear. If we

denote by  $\{\lambda_{i,q}(s)\}_i$  the eigenvalues of  $\mathcal{R}_s^{(q)}$ , we can define

$$P_q(s) = \det(1 - \mathcal{R}_s^{(q)}) = \prod_i (1 - \lambda_{i,q}(s)), \quad (8.3)$$

so that we have a Ruelle zeta function

$$Z_\Gamma(s) := \frac{P_1(s)}{P_0(s)P_2(s)}. \quad (8.4)$$

By the results of [36] §4, the Ruelle zeta function  $Z_\Gamma(s)$  defined above is directly related to the Selberg zeta function of the hyperbolic handlebody  $\mathfrak{X}_\Gamma$  of the form

$$Z(s) = \prod_{\gamma \in \Gamma} (1 - N(\gamma)^{-s}),$$

for  $N(\gamma) = \exp(\ell_\gamma)$  the length of the corresponding primitive closed geodesic (equivalently  $N(\gamma)$  is the norm of the derivative of  $\gamma$  at the repelling fixed point  $z^+(\gamma) \in \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ ). If we consider the set of  $s \in \mathbb{C}$  where 1 is an eigenvalue of  $\mathcal{R}_s^{(q)}$ , these produce possible zeroes and poles of the zeta function  $Z_\Gamma(s)$ : among these, the Hausdorff dimension  $s = \delta_H$ . The set of complex numbers where  $Z_\Gamma(s)$  has a pole provides this way another notion of dimension spectrum of the fractal  $\Lambda_\Gamma$  extending the ordinary Hausdorff dimension.

It should be interesting to study the properties of  $Z_\Gamma(s)$  in relation to the properties of the arithmetic zeta function (3.36) we defined in §3.5.

(iii) *Missing Galois theory.* The data of a spectral triple  $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{H}, D)$  associated to the special fiber at arithmetic infinity may provide a different approach to what Connes refers to as a *missing Galois theory at archimedean places*.

There are already many interesting relations between noncommutative geometry and the general setting of Hilbert's twelfth problem, for a local or global field  $K$  and its maximal abelian (separable) extension  $K^{ab}$ . While class field theory provides a description of  $\text{Gal}(K^{ab}/K)$ , Hilbert's twelfth problem addresses the question of providing explicit generators of  $K^{ab}$  and an explicit action of the Galois group, much as in the Kronecker–Weber case over  $\mathbb{Q}$ . The approach to Hilbert's twelfth problem given by Stark's conjectures (see e.g. [51]) consists of considering a family of zeta functions (e.g. for the Kronecker–Weber case these consist of arithmetic progressions  $\zeta_{n,m}(s) := \sum_{k \in m+n\mathbb{Z}} |k|^{-s}$ ) and generate numbers, which have the form of zeta-regularized determinants (e.g.  $\exp(\zeta'_{n,m}(0))$  for the Kronecker–Weber case). For more general fields it is a conjecture that such numbers are algebraic and that they provide the desired generators with Galois group action. In [26] [27] Manin conjectured that, in the case of real quadratic fields, noncommutative geometry should produce Stark numbers and Galois action via the theory of noncommutative tori.

In our setting, whenever we associate the structure of a spectral triple to the archimedean places, we obtain, in particular, a family of zeta functions (3.7) determined by the spectral triple. These provide numbers of the form considered by

Stark,

$$\exp\left(\frac{d}{ds}\zeta_{a,D}(s)|_{s=0}\right), \quad (8.5)$$

as regularized determinants. Of course, in general there is no reason to expect these numbers to be algebraic. However, it may be an interesting question whether there are spectral triples for which they are, and whether the original Stark numbers arise via a spectral triple. Notice that there is an explicit action of the algebra  $\mathcal{A}$  on the collection of numbers (8.5), which may provide an analog of a Galois action. We hope to return to this in a future work.

## References

- [1] N. Alling and N. Greenleaf. *Foundations of the Theory of Klein Surfaces*. Lecture Notes in Mathematics Vol. 219. Springer Verlag, 1971.
- [2] M. F. Atiyah, V. K. Patodi and I. M. Singer. *Spectral asymmetry and Riemannian geometry. I*. Math. Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc. **77** (1975), 43–69.
- [3] P. Baum and A. Connes. *Geometric K-theory for Lie groups and foliations*. Preprint IHES 1982; l'Enseignement Mathématique, t. 46, 2000, 1–35.
- [4] A. F. Beardon. *The Geometry of Discrete Groups*. Graduate Texts in Mathematics Vol. 91. Springer Verlag, 1983.
- [5] L. Bers. Uniformization by Beltrami equations. *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.* **14** (1961), 215–228.
- [6] S. Bloch, H. Gillet and C. Soulé. *Algebraic Cycles on Degenerate Fibers*. Arithmetic Geometry (Cortona 1994). 45–69, Sympos. Math. XXXVII, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 1997.
- [7] R. Bowen. Hausdorff dimension of quasi-circles. *Publ. Math. IHES* **50** (1979), 11–25.
- [8] M. Boyle and D. Handelman. Orbit equivalence, flow equivalence, and ordered cohomology. *Israel J. Math.* **95** (1996), 169–210.
- [9] A. Connes. An analogue of the Thom isomorphism for crossed products of a  $C^*$ -algebra by an action of  $\mathbb{R}$ . *Adv. in Math.* **39** (1981), no. 1, 31–55.
- [10] A. Connes. Cyclic cohomology and the transverse fundamental class of a foliation. In: *Geometric Methods in Operator Algebras (Kyoto, 1983)*. Pitman Res. Notes in Math., 123, Longman, Harlow, 1986, 52–144.
- [11] A. Connes. Compact metric spaces, Fredholm modules, and hyperfiniteness. *Ergodic Theory and Dynamical Systems* **9** (1989), 207–220.
- [12] A. Connes. *Noncommutative Geometry*. Academic Press, 1994.
- [13] A. Connes. Geometry from the spectral point of view. *Lett. Math. Phys.* **34** (1995), no. 3, 203–238.
- [14] A. Connes and H. Moscovici. The local index formula in noncommutative geometry. *Geom. Funct. Anal.* **5** (1995), no. 2, 174–243.
- [15] C. Consani. Double complexes and Euler  $L$ -factors. *Compositio Math.* **111** (1998), 323–358.
- [16] C. Consani and M. Marcolli. Spectral triples from Mumford curves. *International Math. Research Notices* **36** (2003), 1945–1972.
- [17] J. Cuntz. A class of  $C^*$ -algebras and topological Markov chains II: reducible chains and the *Ext*-functor for  $C^*$ -algebras. *Invent. Math.* **63** (1981), 25–40.
- [18] J. Cuntz and W. Krieger. A class of  $C^*$ -algebras and topological Markov chains. *Invent. Math.* **56** (1980), 251–268.

- [19] F. Dalbo. Codage des géodésiques fermées des quotients de l'espace hyperbolique par un groupe libre. Influence des transformations paraboliques. *Séminaire Gaston Darboux de Géométrie et Topologie Différentielle, 1994–1995* (Montpellier) iii (1995), 3–19.
- [20] C. Deninger. On the  $\Gamma$ -factors attached to motives. *Invent. Math.* **104** (1991), 245–261.
- [21] C. Deninger. Number theory and dynamical systems on foliated spaces. *Jahresber. Deutsch. Math.-Verein.* **103** (2001), no. 3, 79–100.
- [22] F. Guillén and V. Navarro Aznar. Sur le théorème local des cycles invariants. *Duke Math. J.* **61** (1990), no. 1, 133–155.
- [23] G. G. Kasparov.  $K$ -theory, group  $C^*$ -algebras, and higher signatures (Conspectus). *Novikov Conjectures, Index Theorems and Rigidity*. Vol. 1 (Oberwolfach, 1993), 101–146, London Math. Soc. Lecture Note Ser. 226, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1995.
- [24] Yu. I. Manin. Three-dimensional hyperbolic geometry as  $\infty$ -adic Arakelov geometry. *Invent. Math.* **104** (1991), 223–244.
- [25] Yu. I. Manin. Lectures of zeta functions and motives (according to Deninger and Kurokawa). Columbia University Number Theory Seminar (New York, 1992). *Astérisque* No. 228 (1995), 4, 121–163.
- [26] Yu. I. Manin. *Von Zahlen und Figuren*. Preprint math.AG/0201005.
- [27] Yu. I. Manin. *Real Multiplication and noncommutative geometry*. Preprint math.AG/0202109.
- [28] Yu. I. Manin and M. Marcolli. Holography principle and arithmetic of algebraic curves. *Adv. Theor. Math. Phys.* **3** (2001), N. 5, 617–650.
- [29] Yu. I. Manin and M. Marcolli. Continued fractions, modular symbols, and noncommutative geometry. *Selecta Mathematica, New Ser.* **8** (2002), 475–520.
- [30] M. Marcolli. Limiting modular symbols and the Lyapunov spectrum. *Journal of Number Theory* **98** (2003), 348–376.
- [31] K. Matsuzaki and M. Taniguchi. *Hyperbolic Manifolds and Kleinian Groups*. Oxford Univ. Press, 1998.
- [32] J. W. Milnor. Infinite cyclic coverings. *Conference on the Topology of Manifolds (Michigan State Univ., E. Lansing, Mich., 1967)*, pp. 115–133, Prindle, Weber and Schmidt, Boston, Mass., 1968.
- [33] D. Mumford. An analytic construction of degenerating curves over complete local rings. *Compositio Math.* **24** (1972), 129–174.
- [34] W. Parry and S. Tuncel. *Classification Problems in Ergodic Theory*. London Math. Soc. Lecture Notes Series 67, 1982.
- [35] M. Pimsner and D. Voiculescu. Exact sequences for  $K$ -groups and Ext-groups of certain cross-product  $C^*$ -algebras. *J. Operator Theory* **4** (1980), 93–118.
- [36] M. Pollicott. Kleinian groups, Laplacian on forms and currents at infinity. *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **110** (1990), 269–279.
- [37] I. Putnam.  $C^*$ -algebras from Smale spaces. *Can. J. Math.* **48** (1996), 175–195.
- [38] I. Putnam and J. Spielberg. The structure of  $C^*$ -algebras associated with hyperbolic dynamical systems. *J. Funct. Anal.* **163** (1999), 279–299.
- [39] D. B. Ray and I. M. Singer. Analytic torsion for complex manifolds. *Ann. of Math. (2)* **98** (1973), 154–177.
- [40] J. Renault. *A Groupoid Approach to  $C^*$ -algebras*. Lecture Notes in Mathematics 793, Springer, 1980.
- [41] G. Robertson. Boundary actions for affine buildings and higher rank Cuntz–Krieger algebras. In: J. Cuntz, S. Echterhoff (eds.),  *$C^*$ -algebras*, Springer Verlag, 2001, pp. 182–202.
- [42] D. Ruelle. Non-commutative algebras for hyperbolic diffeomorphisms. *Invent. Math.* **93** (1988), 1–13.
- [43] M. Saito. Modules de Hodge polarisable. *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.* **24** (1988), 849–995.

- [44] P. Schneider. Introduction to the Beilinson conjectures. In: Rapoport, M. Schappacher, P. Schneider (eds.), *Beilinson's Conjectures on Special Values of L-functions*, 1–35, (Perspectives in Math., Vol. 4) Academic Press, Boston, New York, 1988.
- [45] M. Seppälä. Computation of period matrices of real algebraic curves. *Discrete Comput. Geom.* **11** (1994), 65–81.
- [46] J. P. Serre. Facteurs locaux des fonctions zêta des variétés algébriques (définitions et conjectures). *Sém. Delange–Pisot–Poitou*, exp. 19, 1969/70.
- [47] J. Spielberg. Free-product groups, Cuntz–Krieger algebras, and covariant maps. *Internat. J. Math.* **2** (1991), no. 4, 457–476.
- [48] J. Steenbrink. Limits of Hodge structures. *Invent. Math.* **31** (1976), 229–257.
- [49] J. Steenbrink. A Summary of Mixed Hodge Theory. In: *Proc. Symp. Pure Math. 55 Part 1*, AMS, Providence, 1991, 31–41
- [50] D. Sullivan. On the ergodic theory at infinity of an arbitrary discrete group of hyperbolic motions. In: *Riemann surfaces and related topics: Proceedings of the 1978 Stony Brook Conference (State Univ. New York, Stony Brook, N.Y., 1978)*, pp. 465–496, Ann. of Math. Stud. 97, Princeton Univ. Press, 1981.
- [51] J. Tate. *Les conjectures de Stark sur les fonctions L d'Artin en  $s = 0$* . Progress in Mathematics Vol. 47, Birkhäuser, 1984.
- [52] S. Weinberger, Applications of coefficients. Lecture given at Vanderbilt University, May 2003.
- [53] R. O. Wells. *Differential Analysis on Complex Manifolds*. Springer-Verlag, 1980.
- [54] R. F. Williams. Classification of subshifts of finite type. *Ann. of Math. (2)* **98** (1973), 120–153; errata, *ibid.* **99** (1974), 380–381.

Caterina Consani  
Department of Mathematics  
University of Toronto  
Canada  
e-mail: kc@math.toronto.edu

Matilde Marcolli  
Max-Planck Institut für Mathematik  
Bonn  
Germany  
e-mail: marcolli@mpim-bonn.mpg.de



To access this journal online:  
<http://www.birkhauser.ch>

---